

ようこそ

実力至上主義

おれは  
この学校で  
最強になる

の教室へ





# **Classroom Of The Elite - Freedom huh?**

**bdowk**

**Published: 2022**

# Before you Read.....

Welp, this is my first time writing a fanfic.....

Feel free to criticize my shitty and cringy writing for future improvements.

...

...

Don't expect quality writing.

Some of the characters are OOC.

...

...

...

**SPOILER WARNING... DON'T READ IF YOU HAVEN'T READ V1-Y2V4**

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

**Changes:**

Kiyo has earned 5 million points and a favor by blackmailing Manabu in their first confrontation (he has a video and audio recording of everything that happened), the favor was used for the rooftop incident.

...

...

...

...

The story will be a KiyotakaXMasumi route, lezzzgo Beer-chan.

**UPDATE 02/17/22: THAT'S THE SHIP THAT I PLANNED BUT.....**

Also, I feel like my writing is improving compared from the first parts of the story which were somehow hard to read, I think I will edit to improve them, if I had the time.

I will write some other fillers(based on some other fanfic that I read) and specify the volume for more past Kiyo and Masumi interactions.

### ***ARC 1 SUMMARY AND ADDITIONAL DETAILS***

Kiyo here will have a video and audio recording of Kushida's other self and the betrayal recording during the sports festival which will be used to expell Kushida and send her to jail for false accusation of rape. By the end of first year Horikita's class will only have 37 students (Kushida and Yamagod expelled, Kiyo will move to Class-A).

**SO YEAH JUST DON'T READ THIS FIC IF YOU'RE A FULL TIME KUSHIDA SIMP.**

# Filler and some Changes 1 ( V5 )

## Some changes in Volume 5 and we will have a Ayano Kamuro first interaction

After the commotion I made in the race against the elder Horikita, I sent my demands to Ryuuen to record their interaction between Kushida, Horikita and him. I sent the file that contains Manabe recording him plotting an accident against Horikita, and told him that he should act as he planned while recording and leading some part of the conversation that Kushida really betrayed our class.

Convo:

X: [accidentplotting.mp3]

.....

Ryuuen: [What do you want?!]

X: [As you can see I already know what you're up to. Record your conversation with Suzune and Kikyou and act like the way you planned, and lead the conversation to where Kikyou really betrayed Class-D.] I used their given name to act like that I'm someone close to both of them, dunno if it works.

Ryuuen: [Kukuku you're really interesting and what if I didn't accept your demand?]

X: [Well you really can't ignore my proposal since I also have a footage with 3 of your classmates bullying my classmate before, you really can't ignore that do you? ] I know that Ryuuen is smart enough that he will eventually know that Manabe was the one who recorded that, and will lead him to target Karuizawa next.

Ryuuen: [Huh?! What are you talking about?]

X: [ Who knows? As I say you really can't refuse my proposal, just act surprised when I send the recording again later so that Kikyou will not notice that you're already dancing in the palm of my hand. After that send the file to me.]

Ryuuen: [Tsk, Fine you bastard!! Once this is over I will personally hunt for you. And you will pay dearly for ruining my plans every single fuuucking time.]

X: [Let's play again DragonBoiii.]

Ryuuen: [ ./ . ]

If all things went well, I will have 3 cards to play against Kushida since the day I learned her other self. I won't expel her yet since she's still useful in the class and she really doesn't know that I have these against her. I hope Ryuuken really acts well for Kushida not to notice.

*Sigh.* Time to change and meet the girl that asked for me in the front gate.

After I changed into my uniform, I went to the front gate as promised. Just as she'd said, the violet haired girl was waiting for me, she looks annoyed for some reason when I approached her.

"You wanted to talk to me about something?" I asked.

"Tsk, You're 10 minutes late" she replied it looks like I took some time with my conversation with Ryuuken "Follow me."

"Follow you where?"

"The special building."

The girl started walking without any further explanation. To break the awkward silence...

"Hmm.... Is this what they call a romantic confession?" as I blurted it out she glared with me with disgust.

"Huuuh?!!" looks like I'm mistaken and made her more annoyed than before

"Sorry." as I said that I remembered something that happened on the first week of school "by the way do you like beer?" she flinched with my question.

"Wh- what are you talking about?"

"....." I just kept quiet for the time being waiting for her to confirm my suspicions, then she stopped walking and faced me.

"Hey, did she tell you?" looks like I'm right but...

"She?" hmm so someone other than me saw her pick a can of beer.

"Tsk, nevermind." she replied and asked "So how did you know??"

"Well when I'm passing in the convenience store back then, I saw you put a can of beer in your bag" I replied "It seems troublesome for me that's why I never approached you that time."

"Troublesome huh? Will you also blackmail me?"

"Also? Aahhhhhh so that 'she' you're talking about blackmailed you huh?"

"Yes, that's why I hate that loli who have seen me" she sigh "Ever since that day that I came here in this school I became her slave."

"Loli? You mean Sakayanagi?? So she's the one who wanted to meet me?" she nodded "But why?" I asked.

"Because you ran fast earlier? I really don't know the details. She's

really laughing creepily earlier when she saw you ran fast against Horikita-senpai."

"Huh? just because of the fact that I ran fast?" she nodded "Well that's kind of disturbing to be honest... Anyway, will Sakayanagi be the leader of your now due to Katsuragi's failure earlier?"

"Maybe? after Katsuragi's failure today, most of his followers transferred to that Loli's faction, I think he only has one follower now." Maybe that's the green haired guy that became leader on the island before?? The guy called Yahiko?

"Hmmm" oh I almost forgot "By the way what's your name?"

"....." what's with this silence? I just asked her name "....."

I sighed internally "So you'll tell me your class affairs and you'll not tell me your name Beer-chan?"

"....." What's wrong with this girl? did I do something wrong?

"Should I report you to Sakayanagi when I meet her, Beer-chan?"

"Tsk, what's with that stupid nickname?!..... Kamuro Masumi." she retorted as she named herself in a low voice enough for me to hear. "Back to my question earlier will you also blackmail me for what you saw in the convenience store just like what that Loli did?"

I just stared at her for some time as I looked at her she really was a beauty just like Horikita, well speaking of Horikita I think they have the same personality?? but without the compass I guess.

Looks like I'm staring too much and....

She stopped walking and hugged herself with both of her arms, as she wore a look like she's looking at trash. "Disgusting Pervert!, this is why all boys are the same, you all disgust me!"

"Wait, I'm just lost in my own thoughts, I didn't stare at you because of that, and I didn't say that I will blackmail you, did I?"

"Then why are you staring at me just like a total creep?" she said as she's is still hugging herself.

I sighed "I just thought you're like my seatmate without a compass that stab me most of the time."

She giggled a little, did she find it funny that I've been abused by my seatmate? "So you have a dangerous seatmate huh, so back again with my question, will you blackmail me?"

"Who knows" she glared at me again with irritation.

This girl..... Why did she asked that question multiple times... Did she really thought that I'll blackmail her? But I guess I can use what I know against her when the right time comes.

As we arrived at the special building's third floor, one of the few places where no surveillances cameras were installed.... a wild Lolimon appeared.

"Fufufu you seems to be having fun Masumi-san" Carrying a cane in one hand, Sakayanagi looked at me with a cold smile. As if



reading my thoughts she faced me and asked."Did you perhaps think something rude about me?" as I just nonchalantly shook my head.

"Can I go back now?" Kamuro replied.

"Yes. Excellent work, Masumi-san. I'll count on you again in future."

"Yes." Kamuro quietly nodded with slight irritation seen on her face.

"See you later, Kamuro." she just glared at me, again what did I do?

After some time she sighed "Later Ayanokouji."

As I turn back to the wild Lolimon Sakayanagi "You wanted to see me?" I asked.

Sakayanagi didn't answer. For a silent moment, she and I just stared at each other. The school building began to get dark.

"You seemed to get along well with my Masumi-san." she said as she finally broke the silent atmosphere surrounding us.

"Well she's easy to get along with for a loner like me, I guess?"

"Fufufufu, you also drew quite a lot of attention in that final relay, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun."

"Oh, sorry. Can I send one little message? I've got someone waiting," I replied, Now show me your acting skills Dragon-Boii.

"Go ahead." Sakayanagi smiled, not appearing displeased at all.

I sent off the message I'd prepared via my phone. "So, can I assume you're the one who called me here?"

"Yes."

"What do you want? I'd like to wrap this up quickly, if possible."

"After seeing you run, I remembered something. I called you here because I wanted to share the shock I felt with you. It's almost like the buildup toward a romantic confession, don't you think?"

"I really have no idea what you're talking about."

Clack. Clack. Sakayanagi, still gripping her cane, moved right next to me.

"It's been quite a long time, Ayanokouji-kun. Eight years and 243 days, actually."

"You're joking, right? I don't even know who you are."

"Heh. No, I suppose not. It's just me who knows you, after all."

Clack.

Clack.

Her cane's tapping gradually grew quieter. What in the world was this about? I decided I was done here, and turned to walk away from Sakayanagi.

"White Room," Sakayanagi said.

I stopped dead in my tracks at those two simple words. They cracked my composure.

"It's unpleasant, isn't it? When only your opponent knows your secrets."

"You..."

"This is a reunion. I just wanted to come give you a proper greeting."

Reunion? Though I kept my back to Sakayanagi, I turned my head to look at her. I had never seen her before. I didn't remember this girl, and I wasn't missing any memories of my past. I had met Sakayanagi for the first time at school. There was no arguing with that fact.

"Oh, it's quite all right that you don't know me. But I know you. We have a strange sort of bond, you could say. To reunite with you in a place like this... To be honest, I never thought I'd see you again. But now, all the mysteries have been cleared away. The island, the cruise ship, and Class D's expulsion uproar. I couldn't imagine that everything was on account of Horikita Suzune. So, you were the one pulling the strings."

"What are you talking about? There are lots of smart people in my class," I retorted. I needed to be calm. I needed to get through this without panicking. I'd have time to think later.

"When you say 'smart people,' are you referring to Horikita Suzune-san? Or perhaps Hirata Yousuke-kun? Either way, now that I know who you are, I suppose it doesn't really matter who anyone else is," she replied.

Apparently, she wasn't lying. She really did know me.

"Please, relax," she added. "I've no intention of telling anyone about you at present."

"Wouldn't things be easier if you did?"

"I don't want anything to get in my way. I'm the perfect person to bury false genius." Clack . Her thin cane clattered against the floor. "I've found little pleasure in this boring school life."

"Can I ask you something else?"

"Please, go ahead. I'm honored to have you ask me a question. If you'd like to know, I'm even happy to tell you how I know about you."

"No, I'm not interested in that. There's just one thing I want to know."

My eyes met Sakayanagi's.

"Can you bury me?"

"Hee hee!" Sakayanagi chuckled softly to herself, and smiled once more. "Sorry for laughing. I don't intend to insult you. I know quite well how incredible you are. I've been looking forward to this. I'll

be able to realize my dearest wish by destroying the greatest masterpiece that your father ever made."

I wanted that, too. My destruction—my defeat—would mean that the old man would lose.

I wanted the sad contradiction that I carried within me to be destroyed. I wished for that from the bottom of my heart.

But something felt wrong in Sakayanagi's statement, I think what she wanted to bury was not me but the **WHITE ROOM** itself.

---

**I will try to update ASAP**

**Again these will be some of the changes that I will have**

**Kiyo has earned 5 million points and a favor by blackmailing Manabu in their first confrontation (he has a video and audio recording of everything that happened), the favor was used for the rooftop incident.**

**I will write some other fillers(based on some other fanfic that i read) and specify the volume for more past Kiyo and Masumi interactions.**

**Kiyo here will have a video and audio recording of Kushida's other self and the betrayal recording during the sports festival which will be used to expell Kushida and send her to jail for false accusation of rape. By the end of first year Horikita's class will only have 37 students (Kushida and Yamagod expelled, Kiyo will move to Class-A).**

**The story will be a KiyotakaXMasumi route, lezzzgo Beer-chan.**

## Filler and some Changes 2 ( V7 )

**Some changes in Volume 7 (this is the part where Ryuen and his gang strted following students from Kiyo's class).**

**Skipping V6 since Kamuro has no screen time and I don't know what to add. Sadge**

As the Ayanokouji group left, I went to the direction opposite of the bathroom. "Well I guess it's time to approach them now huh?" I muttered

While nobody I know was around except for the those two, who's constantly tailing me since the sports festival.

The first girl was Kamuro Masumi, from Class A. The last time I talked to her was when I talked Sakayanagi.

"Hey Beer-chan, Can I have a minute??" I asked

"Huh? Me? What?" Her body language told me she'd only just noticed me.

I took a chair next to Kamuro. You could've cut the tension in the air with a knife.

"Don't 'Me?' me you're the only one who has a nickname of Beer-chan in this school"

"Like I said before stop calling me with that stupid nickname!!!" she growled, noticing the gazes of some of the people who passed by, she lowered her head as she stomped my foot.

"Oww." I sighed "You've been following me. What do you want?" I asked.

"Hmm? What're you talking about?!"

"I saw you after class yesterday. Two days ago, at Keyaki Mall. Four days ago, at Keyaki Mall. Six days ago, after class. Seven days ago, after class. You were always there. That's quite a string of coincidences, isn't it?" I asked. On my phone's screen, I showed her several pictures I'd taken of her spying.

"That's... But when...?"

"You were trying to be discreet, so you couldn't exactly meet my eyes when I looked in your direction. No wonder you didn't notice me taking pictures of you."

"Well, so what if I'm following you? Do you have a problem with that?"

"Nothing especially. It's not hurting me or anything. I'm not going

to tell you to stop, either, Beer-chan."

"Exactly. This is just a coincidence. Hey, you're really trying to piss me off with that nickname?" she replied as she stomped my foot again.

"I know I know, so stop stomping my foot. But I have to wonder...what will your boss think when she finds out about this?" I asked.

"Boss? What're you talking about? You've been watching way too many movies."

"Then I suppose I'll report this to Sakayanagi. I'll tell her you're not really very good at tailing me."

"Wait a minute," said Kamuro, grabbing my arm as I stood up.

"You're devoted, aren't you?" I asked. "To Sakayanagi, I mean. She asked you to tail me day after day, and here you are, still doing your job. You must be close to her. Or should I say the Beer threat is effective?"

"Don't give me that. I'm nobody's lackey."

"Does Sakayanagi know that I know what happened in the convenience store?"

"I dunno, So, what's your deal?" Kamuro demanded. "Why is Sakayanagi targeting you?"

"Who knows? I honestly have no clue," I said.

"You're the Class D student that Ryuen's looking for, aren't you? That's the only thing I can think of."

"What're you going to do about it?" I chose not to deny it. If Sakayanagi knew what I was doing, there was no point covering it up.

"You're trying to threaten me, but I could give Ryuen some friendly advice, if I felt like it," Kamuro said.

"So, you're threatening me in return, huh? In that case, how about this?" I decided to make her a proposal. "Feel free to tail me as much as you like. I won't say a word, and I won't rat on you to Sakayanagi. In exchange, I want you to keep quiet. Don't tell anyone other than Sakayanagi what you know about me."

"So, those are your conditions?"

"I don't think it's a bad deal."

"You're right. I have no real interest in helping Ryuen, either." Kamuro nodded in apparent agreement and stood. "I'm going home now. I'm tired."

With that, she headed for the exit "Sakayanagi is really overworking you huh?" I muttered.

And with that I took off, and went towards to my other stalker.

"Yo Stalker-chan" I said

"Stalker-chan??" she said tilting her head

"Yeah yeah Matsushita Stalker-chan" I said while showing the pictures of her following me.

"Uhhhm, you're really not an ordinary student are you?" she asked "And don't call me a stalk- I'm just f-following you since I'm curious, on that day you met up with Sakayanagi-san"

"So you know that too huh." I said, lying as I breath, of course I know that she was following me since Beer-chan approached me after the race. But she didn't enter the building knowing that she will bump into Kamuro or the one I was meeting so I know that she doesn't know what I talked about with Sakayanagi. And the only thing she knows was that I met with Sakayanagi that day.

"So what's your relationship with Class-A?"

"The same relationship as you or more specifically on what you're doing right now they're stalking me, Stalker-chan"

"Like I said I'm not a stalker!!" she shouted and as if she realized what she have done she sat back again in embarrassment, luckily there were no classmates around, but Kamuro was still around. I sighed, I thought she said she's going home now.

"Well they are spying me, since the day that I raced against the former SCP"

"Is that so? Well I need this to get over with this so I'm going straight to the point to clear my suspicions" she said "Are you holding back both in academics and physically?" So that's it huh

"And what basis do you have in your so called suspicions?" I asked a question in her question

"Sensei." wait did Chabashira-sensei... "Don't worry the thing is I bought information about you that cost 10k points, and the only info she gave was that you scored 50's in all subjects in the entrance exam and the price of a point in an exam." This girl is more perceptive than I thought. She's dangerous to my peaceful life.

"Coincidence can be freaky" I said.

She smirked "No need to play dumb now 'ordinary student'-kun with that I also conclude that you're the one responsible in the Old Midterm exam, both of Sudo's problem and the island exam. And your recent attraction with the former SCP, and the one Ryuen's looking for is you right? Of course I'm not 100% sure about the conclusion I made since all of it was just an assumption from what I've observed, but I'm confident with it." As I thought she really is dangerous but...

I sighed "And what will you do with that information? Will you blackmail me and use me like Horikita and ask me to help the class reach class A, 'Miss I'm also holding back'-chan?"

"Yeah, I'm als--- What? How?"

Of course I know since after answering my own test papers, I just observed my classmates to kill time, as for Stalker-chan's case, she always do the same thing, either erase her correct answer or just skip the troublesome problems that took time to solve. But I won't say that since she will thought that I was spying on her.

"Because of sensei." I answered with a lie "When she showed my results to Horikita I took the chance to see the academically gifted students in our class and saw that you're one of them, I just deducted that you're ranked around 2-5% in our year."

"...." she kept quiet with nothing to say back to me.

"Oh by the way if you tell our class I will also tell your secret, you also notice that Ike and Yamauchi have been evading me since I gain attention with the race right?" though I really don't consider them friends. "I think the same will happen to you if I did say that you're also holding back and besides you really want to keep your life and social status as it is, the same as me right???"

"..... Ahhhhhhhh Ok, ok I lost, so we will both keep it a secret, right?" I nodded "but you will tell me what really happened and what will happen behind the scenes from now on.... Deal??"

"Yes, yes Stalker-chan" I answered "By the way you've been scammed."

"Huh?"

"I got those information from sensei for free"

"WHAAAT??!!!"

Well it's not really a scam since she brought it and sensei just confronted Horikita that time.

With that I left Matsushita, and have gone back to where the Ayanokouji group were. What a long bathroom break. I guess I'll just make some excuses when I got there.

---

**Welp same events will still follow with just these changes specially with Stalker-chan**

**Will build-up Chiaki starting here since I really don't want to destroy Class D when Kushida is gone.**



## Filler and some Changes 3 ( V9 )

Some changes and additions in Volume 9 with more Kiyo and Masumi interactions (this is the part where 'before and after' Kiyo save Ichinose)

### \*Beer-chan in Kiyo's room.....Beer-chan POV

I carefully observed the upset girls from Class B. Katsuragi was glaring at me with a sharp gleam in his eyes, well not that I care.

As Ayanokouji got into the elevator I followed suit.

"Yo, Beer-chan, what floor?" He asked, we were the only ones in the elevator, as I felt some awkward feeling within me.

"Can you stop calling me that already, it pisses me off!!" I exclaimed as I glared at him intently.

He sighed "So what floor?"

"I have something to talk to you about. Can I go to your room?"

"Can we talk it out in the lobby?" but seemingly want to refuse to use his room.

"What, do you have plans?"

"No. Is there any problem if we talk there?"

"No one will bother us in your room. Your room is the best place to talk."

"What about your room?" he asked and I just glared at him. 'seriously how can he ask that with a straight face.' I thought. "Yes yes. So it's Sakayanagi's order huh and it's about the thing about Ichinose and You being the same?"

"....I guess, well it looks like she didn't suspect you that you also know that I shoplift that beer before."

We arrive at his room and "Such a plain room." I muttered and it looks like he heard it.

"That's the first thing you say after forcing your way inside my room?"

"How did I force my way in? You agreed to talk into your room, didn't you?" I replied, as I sat down on his bed.

"Well, it was the way you force me to use my room... Never mind. So what is it?"

"Get me something to drink. This is going to be a bit of a long story."

"Okay. I'll go make some tea or coffee."

"You don't have cocoa?" I demanded.

"...I do. Okay, cocoa it is, then."

While he was preparing the cocoa that I asked. "So what did you want to talk about? "

"Are you getting defensive now?"

"It would be strange if I didn't. A girl whom I'm not that close to—who's an enemy student from Class A, on top of that—just came into my room."

"Wow, you sure are quite different from Yamauchi," I said as I still stared at him like I'm testing him and to get some sort of reaction from him. "Aren't you curious?"

"Nope."

"Okay. Then I won't touch on that subject anymore. Whatever. It doesn't matter. That letter earlier, about Ichinose, what do you think about it?"

"What do you mean, what do I think?"

"Exactly what I said. Do you believe that she's a criminal, like the letter said?"

"Who knows? I'm not interested, anyway."

"Even if you're not interested, you must have an opinion on the matter. Do you think Ichinose is a good person or a bad person?"

"You can't say someone's a bad person just because they're a criminal, or that they're a good person just because they aren't."

"....." My evaluation on him kept rising.

"I think it's connected to those rumors someone's been spreading,"

"I suppose so. I did hear about those rumors that have been going around."

"This is just conjecture on my part, but I think that one or more of those rumors might be true or at least somewhat close to being true. Which is exactly why Ichinose isn't fighting back against the rumors and against the letter. That's because if she did fight back, then the truth that she had been keeping hidden would be exposed," he reasoned calmly.

"So, she thinks that if she continues to ignore them, the rumors will end up as nothing more than suspicions."

"Yeah. But that doesn't solve the problem. Ultimately, if the person who's spreading these rumors knows the real truth and keeps at it, they can get more and more specific with the rumors, without actually saying it themselves. When they do that, there's a high probability that Ichinose won't be able to hide it anymore."

The water came to a boil, and he poured it into a cup. Then, he put a cup of cocoa on the table. I didn't go to drink it right away. Why? Just because....

"Not going to drink it?" he asked.

"I have a sensitive tongue." I lied, I just want to see his reaction after I left without drinking it "It's just as you've guessed. Right now, Ichinose is being targeted by a student who knows the truth that she wants to keep hidden."

"And how do you know that?"

"You know why. Sakayanagi said it right in front of you, after all."

"So that's it huh, the thing she said about you and Ichinose being similar."

"I figured. So I'll tell you the truth that Ichinose has been hiding and my first encounter with the Loli. Besides, I'm sure that tomorrow or the day after, everyone will know it anyway."

***\*After telling my first encounter with Sakayanagi and some bits of Ichinose's so told "crime"...***

"...AH, MAN, I'm exhausted. It's been a long time since I talked that much." I said, it really felt exhausting... "So basically, I'm a habitual shoplifter but in Ichinose's case Sakayanagi told me she just stole once."

"So about you, do you shoplift even recently?"

"Sakayanagi has been working me to the bone. I haven't had the time to shoplift."

"So what exactly do you hope to achieve by telling me the truth about your past?" he asked

"I don't particularly like Sakayanagi or Ichinose or anything. But it's just that, well, the truth about Ichinose shoplifting really was a shock to me, honestly. She's so popular. You'd think she would be satisfied with everything she has, but she's actually the same as me." I chuckled self-deprecatingly. "Stop Sakayanagi. You can do it, can't you?"

"In other words, you're asking me to save Ichinose?" he asked with his usual blank expression.

"Yes. If things keep going this way, Ichinose is going to be crushed, and I don't mean physically. I mean her heart."

"I see. So why me?"

"You're the only person in this school who I can come to. You should know that much."

"I stand to gain nothing from this."

"Probably not, no," I said, well I think I'm satisfied, since I've already done what the Loli ordered me to do. "I'm looking forward to seeing how this ends."

He sighed "Beer-chan your cocoa." I ignored him and continued to proceed to exit his place. "So I can also call you Cocoa-chan now huh, Beer-chan?"

I flinched and stopped to face him "Uggh, you came up with another one disgusting nickname, you really pissed me off!"

I just did it to get a reaction from him what a troublesome boy' I thought as I sighed internally.

"Just don't do that to other people when you visit them it's disrespectful." he said while drinking the cold cocoa as I turned to the door "later Kamuro."

"Later, Ayanokouji." I said in a light voice.

Walking back to my dorm I recall my interactions with him, I think he's the only one in this school that I talked with in a long time and talked that much, he's really easy to talk to though he sometimes pissed me off with his teasing and he really listens to what I say.

Contradiction after contradiction huh?

This small interactions between me and him are somewhat awkward...but...

"Not a bad feeling" I muttered as I felt like I form a light smile in my face.

I'm really looking forward to seeing how this ends.

### ***\*Timeskip with the 4 new rumors***

*Ayanokouji Kiyotaka has a crush on Karuizawa Kei.*

*Hondou Ryouutarou is only interested in chubby girls.*

*Shinohara Satsuki engaged in prostitution when she was in junior high.*

*Satou Maya hates Onodera Kayano.*

### **In Class-A room**

"You seem to be in a bad mood did something happen, hime?" asked by Hashimoto the Snek

"Nothing, I just didn't think that he will do something like this." replied Loli, I agree with the Snek she really seem to be in a bad mood today.

"Is this about one of the new rumors?" I whispered to her.

"Ara, how can you tell Masumi-san?" she answered with a question.

"Because of your obsession to him I guess?" I answered "Well I'm also quite interested in him to be honest."

"Fufufu, did I hear things right that you seem to be interested in a boy, Masumi-san?" Oops looks like I said something that they might misinterpret. This damn Loli, can't even let my guard down even for a little while.

"Is that true Kamuro?! Who is it?!" shouted by Snek gaining the attention of the class in our direction.

"It's nothing like that, shut up!! Idiot!" I shouted, feeling some sort

of light embarrassment crept within me.

"Say hime who is it?"

"The one I told you to spy on, but you reported that they met in secret right?"

So she had Snek spy Ayanokouji again huh, I think he already know that he's being spied on, since he easily spotted me and have evidence to support that I have been spying him from before.

Of course I won't tell him that Ayanokouji knew, I want to see his surprised face when he learned that Ayanokouji knew Snek was following him.

"Is it true Kamuro, You're interested into King?"

""King??" asked Loli and me wondering why he calls him king.

"Well it's just a nickname I came up with since the mixed training camp. HAHAAH."

"Fufufu tell me the details later Hashimoto-kun"

And with that Mashima-sensei arrived in the classroom, I hope Snek won't press the matter again later.

### ***\*A day before Ichinose returns to school***

"Say where are we going?" I asked Loli who I am accompanying.

"I will buy some chocolate Masumi-san" she replied as a wide smile crept on her face. "Fufufufu, It will be something like a belated Valentine gift to him, I guess?"

"Chocolate huh? Hmmm" come to think of it I never given even a single chocolate to a boy my age, I only given some to my father and little brother when I'm younger and I don't really have someone I consider a friend in this school. Well not do I care since I never really fallen in love with someone.... "Wait... him?"

"To Ayanoukoji-kun, of course. I know that he will save Ichinose-san, and I think it's just proper to reward him since I put him some troublesome thing, I guess"

"You really are confident that he will save her huh?"

"Of course, I am" she answered with her usual creepy smug smile.

"Hmmm" I said "You really know him well don't you, what's your relationship with him?"

"Ara Masumi-san you seem to be a lot more talkative ever since your visit in his room, you make me jealous Masumi-san." she answered and successfully dodged my question. Tsk.

"Huh?! stop it, it's nothing like that!"

"And you really are interested in him just like you said before? fufufufu."

".....Maybe?? ...a little I guess." I answered truthfully since this Loli was just like reading my thoughts.

"So?" I really can't read her.

"What?"

"Will you also give him some chocolate as a Belated Valentine gift?" she asked with a grin on her face.

"Huh?! Don't joke around why would I give some chocolate to someone I barely knew?!" I questioned irritably. "And besides I'm only a little interested in him not like you that you're so obsessed with him to make me work so hard."

"Ehhh?? You changed a little Masumi-san and I think it's a good thing I guess."

"What?" what is this Loli talking about?

"Ever since you talked to him, it's like you express more of your hidden feelings aside from your grumpy look, which is rarely shown from before."

"Guuuuh, Well I guess you're right in some way. But I did not expect you of all people, to treat me this way."

"Well you are valuable to me I guess? Since you act as my feet. But I think that's what really stops you from trusting others was because of the pent up trust issues you have, related to your past I guess?"

"...."

"That's why I resorted to blackmailing you at the convenience store that day, and you easily complied mainly because you really don't want to trouble other people right? And I think he also saw that you really are a good person at heart and he complied to your request to save Ichinose-san" she said 'For the monster he thinks himself, I think Ayanokouji-kun's thirst for things that never thought in that place was genuine.' Sakayanagi thought.

"....Well aren't you the one who told me? And asked him to save her?"

"Like I said he also saw that you really are a good person and I think he accepted because you're sincere when you asked him to save Ichinose-san."

"....."

She kept blabbering like she knew me.... This damned Loli!

"So? Will you give him some chocolate?" She really want me to give him huh.

".....Fine fine" I resigned defeated, this Loli is really a troublesome brat.... Well I guess it's ok to give him some obligatory chocolate..... It's not what you think, alright?!!

*\*Going back to the dorm after Ichinose gave her chocolate to*

### ***Kiyo, still Beer-chan POV***

UGGHHH, that Loli really pisses me off!! Why am I the only one who will be giving both of our chocolates to him? and when I ask her she really give me some vague excuses like meeting the *Chairman*. As I was out of my thoughts his usual monotone voice called to me from my back

"Yo Beer-chan why are you thinking so hard? or should I say Cocoa-chan now?" as I looked back at his usual poker face

"I need to talk to you again privately, and like I-~~SAID-DONT-CALL-ME-THOSE-SILLY-NICKNAMES!!~~" I said

"So it's in my room again?"

"Of course."

"Is it Sakayanagi's orders again?" I nodded "I see."

As we arrive in his room, and as I sat in his bed and he sat in a chair in front of me "Won't you get me something to drink?" I asked

"Will you drink it? I don't want to waste effort and time if in the end you will not consume what I serve you."

"I'll have coffee." I said ignoring his lecture.

He sighed "If you didn't drink it I will also call you coffee-chan from now on."

"Tsk, Right right I'll drink it this time, but let me just observe you while you make it."

"You really don't trust me do you?"

".... Of course no, Baka!"

After making the coffee and placed it on the small table in between us.

"So, what do you want to talk about."

"You really saved her huh?" I asked

"Well you asked for it didn't you?"

"Well it's all Sakayanagi's order."

"Well it's all Horikita's plan I guess."

"Pfffttt Hahaha. No use in using that cover in me, Sakayanagi drop some hints here and there and I connected them leading to the real mastermind of your class which is YOU!!!"

Like the withdrawal of Sudou's case and the Island Exam, though I really don't know what happened I think he's the one behind it all and that's why they won.

And every weird achievements from his class.

Why do I call them weird? Because it was Loli was the one who called them weird in the first place.

'Kawaii' (Kiyo taught in his mind as he watch Kamuro laugh)

"Is that so?" he said "well I guess it can't be helped."

"You seem to be calm." I took a sip of my coffee "Even though I

now know your secret now."

"I guess I can trust you even a little? Since I also know your secret. And besides I think that you really didn't care much in your class affairs. Anyways what's the real purpose of your visit?"

I took the two boxes of in my bag "Here, from Sakayanagi and me."

"Hmmm."

"What?"

"Well I'm not that surprised from the one from Sakayanagi, but to think that Beer-chan will also give me some choco, could it be...." he teased in his usual monotone voice and apathetic face.

"Don't misunderstand me! Hmmp, it's just some sort of thanks from saving Ichinose-san, though I don't know what lead Sakayanagi to ask you to help her in a roundabout way but I think it ended in a good way."

"I think it's about Nagumo knowing Ichinose's secret, He forced Ichinose to say her secret to join the SCP when she got rejected from the former SCP and Sakayanagi want to save her from Nagumo."

"Wait, why are you telling me this?" The Loli didn't tell me where she got the information regarding Ichinose's secret.

"Well, even if you say that it's from Sakayanagi's order, I think you're one of the reason who made me act to save Ichinose."

"I-is that so?" he nodded "Well I think it ended well, which made me somewhat glad."

"Not really." he sighed "I think Nagumo will give his attention to me back again because of that race. Also, I think he knows that I was the one who helped Ichinose." 'And besides I'm still waiting for that Man's future actions to interfere my life here.' Kiyo thought

"So you gained another of your so called 'unwanted attention'?" he nodded "I think, I'm sorry for that, not that I care much Hmmp!."

"Hmm, this is the first time I heard you apologized."

"What?! is it a bad thing?"

"No"

"Anyways I had fun and felt relieved at the same time, I think I should go now it's getting late." I said as I stand from his bed. "By the way can I get your contact info? I think Sakayanagi will make me work again with you."

"Yes, let's do that it will be a problem for me if a girl, especially from another class is seen coming out of from my room."



"...That's true, well anyways I enjoyed your company today." I blurted out some of my genuine thoughts.

"Same to me it looks like you're very different from the last time we talked, it seems like you're more relaxed."

"I think it's because of you." I muttered

"What?"

"Nothing, anyways can I consider you as a friend from now on?"

"Is that so, anyways if Sakayanagi ordered you some troublesome task, you can ask me again and I'll see if I can lend assistance."

"Why?"

"Aren't we friends from now on?"

"...."

"But don't asked me if it's something regarding your class affairs"

"Yeah, got it."

"I guess I can't call you Coffee-chan huh? you actually drank all of it."

"Too bad for you I guess" I said with a little chuckle as I headed to his door "Well anyways I will go now"

"See ya later, Kamuro."

"Yeah, bye Ayanokouji." I said with a slight smile on my face

Returning to my room and as I lie down in my bed, and recalling the events that happened today. It really is an eventful day for me.

"My first friend in this school huh" I muttered.

# Chapter 1: Another normal day

It was finally the first of March, a few days after the end-of-term exams.

Monday, the day where everyone was anxiously waiting for the results to be announced.

After all, in the case of a failing grade, the only option left was expulsion.

But as I entered the classroom everyone looked at me with some with curious looks and while most of the guys glared at me. I saw the Ayanokouji Group comforting Airi. I sighed internally, this will be a bit troublesome....

"Now would you mind telling us what led to that kind of development?" Horikita asked as she glared at me.

## *\*Flashback Sunday Kiyo POV*

Recently I've become closer to Kamuro Masumi of Class A, today I asked her to teach me how to draw and paint when she said that she belong in the Art Club, in exchange I will teach her to play some chess, since Sakayanagi ordered her to not because she wanted to play with Kamuro, but because she said she's 'bored'. So she came up with an idea to play with someone I taught.

'What a troublesome girl.' I thought.

Well to be honest I'm kind of interested in painting since they didn't teach that in the WR, and besides I really enjoy Kamuro's company.

*\*knock knock*

As I head out I saw Kamuro in her casual outfit for the second time, the first one I think it's when I had a chat with Sakayanagi after I bought some cold medicine for Kei during the winter break. Most of the time she wears her school uniform when I see her.

"Let's go."

"....Yeah"

"Stop staring too much, pervert"

"No, I'm just thinking that this the second time I saw you in a casual outfit"

"Is that so? Well come on let's go."

"Well it looks good on you" I tried to compliment her.

"Baka." she muttered in a light voice as she averted her eyes.

We were now on our way to buy some supplies that we'll be used for painting, I guess I should also buy a chess board, since playing in the phone or in the computer for too long kinda strain my eyes.

"That Loli really is obsess with a match with you huh?" she asked

"I don't know what you're talking about. I'm just an average student"

"Yeah yeah, Average-kun." she said mockingly

"By the way why did she choose me, aren't there anyone in your class who knows chess?"

"Who knows, she said that I should learn from you since you're really good in it, and besides I really didn't get along with my classmates since I'm always with Sakayanagi and acts as her legs and she really have me work hard. Haaaah thinking about it pisses me off."

"Is that so? So who's with her right now?"

"Snek"

"Who's that?" I asked

"Hashimoto" she answered "By the way he said that you're meeting with Karuizawa in secret, what's your relationship with her?"

"We're just friends, I guess"

"Hmmm, is that so?"

As we go out of the dorm we were greeted by Ichinose

"A-ayanokouji-kun...??"

"Yo Ichinose" I greeted

"And..... Kamuro-san right?"

"Yes, hello Ichinose-san" Ichinose seems to be a little surprise by Kamuro's greeting, since most students know that she's like a person who is kinda unapproachable, just like Horikita.

I saw Horikita sitting on a bench nearby beside the vending machine, pretending to read a book while eavesdropping.

'Oi at least greet us or help me here' I thought.

"...Y-yes hello Kamuro-san, H-haha-ha I really didn't that you knew each other and specially be this close." Ichinose said as she stammered in her words.

"We're friends" Kamuro said, as I nodded in response.

"Is that so, Uhm A-are you perhaps on a date?" she nervously teased us.

"We were just headed to the mall to buy some materials so she can teach me how to paint" I answered quickly to avoid some misunderstandings she might have.

"Is that so? H-haha-ha" Ichinose laugh nervously

I think it's ok to tell that Kamuro is one of the reasons I helped her "And besides she's the one who asked me to hel—" As if knowing what will I say to Ichinose, Kamuro just covered my mouth with her hands.

"Don't make things more complicated" she whispered "Sorry Ichinose-san we should get going now so that we can paint later as soon as possible. Let's go" she said to Ichinose as she grabbed my hand and dragged me forward.

"Sorry Ichinose, See you later."

"....ah, uhm A-haha-ha Bye Ayanokouji-kun" she said as she waved her hands while smiling wryly.

Looking back at Horikita she just glared at me like saying 'I demand an explanation later'.

She already heard our conversation right, what other explanation should I give her?

"That Horikita is sure rude to you, she didn't even greet you." Kamuro said as she let go of my hand.

"Well don't mind her she's always like that"

We chatted with some trivial things as we go to the mall, brought the things we needed, and ate lunch before going back to the dorm. We didn't care about the gazes we received, some has curious looks as they didn't see Kamuro's look of annoyance, and I think from their perspective we look like a couple. When we head back and don't know what to talk about anymore there's some silence in between us, but it never felt awkward unlike the silence when we first met.

'Not a bad feeling' I thought.

As we arrive in the room and set the materials we bought, Kamuro taught me on what to do, some techniques and gave me some advices. Watching her elegant movements while painting.

"Hey, are you even listening?"

"No, I'm just amaze by how elegant you move while painting."

"Stop saying embarrassing things" she said while turning her face away.

"What's embarrassing about it? I'm just being honest"

She sighed heavily "So? what are you planning to paint?"

I pondered on what to paint, and decided that I will paint the sea. Speaking of the sea, I wondered how was the girl that I save that fainted in the beach back in that summer day. I really can't remember her face since I was in a hurry and also because of the intense summer sunlight." (*this is based in Sakayanagi's V8 SS I think.*)

"I think I will go with the sea"

"Hmmm.. is there something special about it?" she asked

"No, I just remembered a girl that passed out on the beach....." and I told her the details when I save that girl, normally I wouldn't even tell things like this but I think it's permissible since I'm also recalling the scene of the sea that I will paint and things that happened between me and that girl. And besides I've gotten closer to Kamuro with these past two weeks, so I'm somewhat comfortable telling her.

"Hmmm, is that so..... Wait!" she exclaimed.

"What?"

"I think that girl you're talking about is Sakayanagi, if I recall correctly she has this brown boy's handkerchief that she said she borrowed."

"But why is she in the beach alone?"

"Dunno, well I don't know the details but it seems like she really cherished it, it's just like her obsession to you"

"Anyways I'll confirm it when I meet her, just don't ask her yourself."

"Okay."

"You're really observant Kamuro, because you observe your master attentively." I said, teasing her.

"Hey! Is that supposed to be a compliment?" I nodded "Well because I'm an artist I guess, since I want to put all the details I can in my art."

"Yeah putting every effort you can is something that most of the amazing people always dare to do especially when it's something related to art."

"I agree with that, so to you what kind of art you put a lot of effort with?"

"Piano I guess"

"Wait you can play piano?!" I nodded "So why didn't you join the music club?"

"I really didn't plan on joining any clubs here." I replied "But you really are amazing you still joined a club even though you act as Sakayanagi's legs"

"Well I really felt relaxed, at peace and free when I paint. Not thinking of the class affairs, not thinking about Sakayanagi's order and so on. I think just really love painting."

'Wait!! Masumi why are you telling such embarrassing lines to a boy' she thought, feeling really embarrassed on what she just said.

"Free huh" I muttered, this limited time of freedom I have how long can I last? How far can I go? Can I stay here until graduation? What will that man do until I dropped out voluntarily? Will he start

his move now? Do I want to go back there? What will I sacrifice to continue this struggle of freedom?

### ***Beer-chan POV***

"Free huh" he muttered, as I observed him this is the first time I saw him change his expression, not really that he change his normally apathetic face, it's just that his eyes felt like he's lost and....

"Hey Ayanokouji, are you perhaps sad?"

"Hmmm?"

"No, it's just that the look in your eyes felt like you're really sad."

"I just recalled something." he said turning his head to look up at ceiling, as if saying not want to talk about it.

"Is that so? If you don't want to talk about it I guess we should go back to what we're doing." And besides if He really didn't want to talk about it I won't force him since I don't really know how to comfort someone, but I guess if he talked about it I'll listen and do what I can do as friends right?

### ***Kiyo POV***

Sad huh? I really didn't know that feeling, but if that's what it looked like to her I guess it's a good thing? I really don't know about myself but her noticing this kind of things really makes her....

".... You really are amazing Kamuro. Thank you"

"... Where did that come from?" she asked

"For noticing that I don't want to talk about it."

"Well I'm not that really good with this kind of things, but if you're ready to talk about it I guess I'll listen and do what I can to help." she said "And besides let's just paint for now."

Kamuro taught me things that she knew about painting until 7:00 PM.

"Time flies when you love what you do." Kamuro said "Let's just continue this on another day. I think I need to go back for now."

"Yeah, as for the chess I think I can play with you later, using our phones or computer. Let's just play here later when we have some free time."

"Ok, so are you free around 10:00 PM later?"

"I guess there's really nothing to do anyways."

We played on our computers while on a video call, I acted like an online tutor which was usually offered on ads when I browse the net.

I thought her the rules, some of the beginner's to intermediate techniques and strategies.

I taught her until around 2:00 AM.

Well sensei will just announce the results later so I guess it's fine.

**\*Flashback Ends**

"Development? What are you talking about?" I asked, playing dumb as if I don't know what she's talking about.

"Yeah!!, what's your relationship with that Class-A student?!!" Yamauchi shouted.

"Yeah, are you perhaps betraying the class?" asked Shinohara.

"You mean Kamuro? We're just friends" I answered. "And besides Yamauchi aren't you also close to Sakayanagi?" I questioned turning the attention of my classmates to Yamauchi.

"That's...." he sat back to his seat as he didn't answer my question.

"Yeah Yamauchi, you pervert You're still in contact with Class-A leader!!" growled Kei "Are you sure you're not the one who's betraying the class?"

"That's right Haruki what's your relationship with the leader of Class-A?" asked Sudou, while giving me a satisfied look saying 'My love rival for Suzune is out'

"...." Yamauchi stayed silent, as he can't retort back anymore.

"Just don't focus on Haruki. What about you Shinohara, aren't you also seeing Komiya from Class -C?" said Ike with a hint of jealousy.

'Wait didn't they got closer during the winter break?' I thought to myself.

"Yeah that's right, explain yourself Shinohara." said Miyamoto siding with his friend.

As most of them are still quarrelling I sat down on my seat, while Horikita is still glaring at me.

"You already eavesdrop right?? Like I said were just friends"

"....."

"Is there a rule that prevents you from being friends with someone from another class?"

"That's..." she can't retort to my question

"And besides we really get along well and understand each other since we both have a troublesome *Master*" I said as she stabbed me with her compass "Oww, what was that for?"

She stands up "So let's stop quarrelling for the time being, Ayanokouji-kun is right so stop being jealous in someone's relationship with others, but if any of you cause some kind of betrayal or leaked some of our class affairs you will know the consequences." She said coldly and sat down in her seat when she got the response she wanted.

"Good work." I said to her, as she just ignored me in return.

After a short while Chabashira arrive, with a tense feeling that came from my other classmates not knowing if they failed or pass

the exam.

"Everyone successfully passed the exam. These have been your best results so far." Chabashira revealed that everyone in Class C passed.

As cheers of relief came from my classmates especially with Ike who came last. Well as for me, the same as always who was in the around in middle of rankings same with Matsushita.

Ike came in last, with Yamauchi coming up right behind him. They were followed by Hondō, Satou, and Inogashira. Sudou's name was right above Inogashira's. Considering Sudou's results so far, it could be said that he's seen some substantial improvement.

As for the top rankings, coming in first was Keisei, and second place was held by Koenji. Keisei had been getting good grades from the start, and with how diligent he is with his studies, it was only natural that he'd outrank the rest of the class. However, Koenji was still as much of a mystery as ever. He was never studying, and he didn't interact with anyone else, either. If he utilized the full extent of his abilities, then he just may have the potential to surpass even Keisei. Because of all the small fluctuations in Koenji's test results so far, it's possible that, depending on the exam, he's slacking off when he doesn't think it's worth his time. Horikita was ranked third. She usually trailed a bit behind in English, but this time she scored much higher. She had probably gotten a lot better thanks to the time she spent tutoring Sudou.

Chabashira cut into the cheerful atmosphere that had been filling the classroom, immediately replacing it with something much heavier. It was the usual display.

"Most of you were probably already aware of this, but just because you've finished this end-of-term exam doesn't mean that testing has finished for the year. There will be a particularly important special exam soon, and as in previous years, it's scheduled to begin on March 8th."

Chabashira explained what we should expect moving forward. Speaking of March 8th, that's next Monday, isn't it? We had just finished with the end-of-term exam, so a final special exam taking place so soon afterward wasn't unreasonable by any means. After all, it was the last thing left on the school's schedule for the year. Furthermore, third-year students would apparently have to take yet another exam in tandem with the one next week.

"Everyone. This next special exam will be the last one this year. Let's all work together and try our best. If we do, our class should be able to aim for class A without anyone being expelled." Hirata's encouraging words seemed to spread amongst the class, with many students speaking up to show their support.



Chabashira watched over the scene, revealing a vaguely relieved smile.

"The way things have been going recently, I'm starting to think that all of you might just be able to graduate together two years from now." With these parting words, Chabashira dismissed class earlier than usual.

"Having sensei give us a compliment like that feels out of this world, doesn't it?" Ike and Yamauchi began laughing cheerfully.

"But don't get too cocky. Your last exam is only a week away, and by no means will it be easy."

Chabashira spoke up again just before walking out of the classroom, leaving us with this one last reminder. There was only a little time left for us as first-year students. I used the time between classes to take a quick bathroom break.

On the way back to class, I happened across two familiar upperclassmen in the midst of a deep conversation. The first was the current SCP Nagumo Miyabi (Mr.NoticeMeSenpai). He was accompanied by his predecessor, Horikita Manabu. It was probably by sheer coincidence, but Nagumo spotted me immediately. The moment he waved at me as he smirked, he left the elder Horikita.

As I was approached by the elder Horikita, he just passed at me, for us to avoid unnecessary attention from some students.

"Be careful" he said in a low voice. Knowing what he meant I just nodded 'So he's next target is me huh' I thought.

During lunch break I was interrogated by the Ayanokouji group asking about my relationship with Kamuro, which I said 'we are just friends who really got along well due to some similarities'. Airi just gave a sighed of relief while Haruka teased her, meanwhile both Akito and I just watch them as usual. Kesei on the other hand was still in doubt, well considering him he's just like Horikita in some sense.

"Another normal day" I muttered as I go back to the dorms.

---

**Some parts were from the LN I summarized/cut some parts and done some slight changes.**

## Chapter 2: Moving to Class-A Part 1

The next day, Tuesday March 2nd. Chabashira-sensei walked through the door shortly after the bell rang, she stood behind the podium with a more grim expression than usual.

"Sensei, did something happen?" noticing her expression Hirata asked

"...There's something I have to tell you all." She spoke heavily, as if like she was struggling. "We will have a supplementary improvised special exam starting today which also involves expulsion."

""What?!!""

"It is on the basis that there haven't been any expulsions among the first-years"

"Eeeh!? What the heck!? Another special exam!? That's so unfair! The school's acting like a stubborn little brat just because none of us dropped out!?" Ike complained as he sweat nervously

"Only the students who manage to pass this supplementary special exam will be eligible to take the special exam on March 8th." said sensei ignoring Ike's complain "The name of the special exam is The Class Poll."

"The Class... Poll...?"

"The exams only ensure two outcomes it's either one student will be expelled or you will pay 20 million points to overcome the expulsion."

"What?! Isn't that too unreasonable sensei?!!" Hirata exclaimed in a cold with a somewhat angry voice, making the class surprised by his sudden change of attitude. Considering Hirata's personality this is a difficult

"Just sit back for a while Hirata, I'm not done explaining the rules"

"....."

"For the next four days, you'll be evaluated by your fellow classmates. Then on Saturday, you'll select the names of three students you find worthy of praise, and the names of three students you find worthy of criticism and cast your votes for them. That's it."

"T-that's it? That's all the exam is?"

"Correct. That's it. The student who accumulates the most praise

votes will be given a Protection point. On the other hand the student who accumulates the most criticism/censure votes will be expelled."

"" ..... ""

"I-I don't understand what you mean, sensei. T-the person has the most censure votes... are you seriously saying that they'll be expelled?"

"That's right. They'll have to face the guillotine. But rest assured, the class itself won't be penalized if someone drops out this time. That's just the type of exam this is."

"W-what a-about the protection point sensei?" Ike asked nervously

"Protection points grant you the right to override an expulsion. Even if you were to fail a test, as long as you have a protection point, you can use it to cancel out the questions you had gotten wrong. However, these points cannot be transferred between students."

The school had set up this supplementary exam simply because they were upset that nobody had dropped out yet. After all, if the supplementary exam took place and no students dropped out, it would've been meaningless for them to implement all of this in the first place.

Still, the face of Sakayanagi's father, the chairman of the school, crossed my mind. While he may not have shown me his true nature during my encounter with him, he still didn't seem to be the type of person who would enforce such an unreasonable exam, just because no one is expelled.

The exam itself was absurd.

"So this is what he meant huh?" I muttered

"What do you mean by that Ayanokouji-kun" asked by my neighbor.

"No. Nothing"

"If you keep muttering vague things like that without any reason it'll just make me feel a bit creeped out, you know?" I turned away ignoring her and decided to look outside the window.

'I think I will have a talk with Sakayanagi later.' I thought

"It seems unreasonable, doesn't it? Well, that's what I think as a teacher. But, nothing can be done about it now that the school has made its decision. You have no choice but to abide by the rules and take the special exam."

Dark clouds hung over the class despite the fact that everyone had just overcome the end-of-year exam.

"As there's only a short amount of time left until the day of the vote, I will continue the explanation of the rules. The total number

of praise and censure votes for each student will be made publically available at the end of the exam. In other words, the results for the whole class will be announced. However, information regarding who voted for whom will remain undisclosed, as the vote will be taken anonymously."

With an exam like this, they would definitely have to do it anonymously. Votes of praise aside, there would be problems over the censure votes for quite some time if the finer details of the vote were revealed.

"Moving on, one praise vote and one censure vote will invalidate each other. Let's say, for example, that you received censure votes from ten people, and praise votes from thirty. This would be equivalent to a total of twenty praise votes. Additionally, neither vote may be cast for yourself, and it's also forbidden to vote for the same person multiple times."

"What about abstention...? Would we be allowed to abstain from using our censure votes if we wanted to?"

"Of course not. You'll have to cast all of your votes, regardless of which type of vote it is. Even if you're home sick on the day of the exam, you'll still have to cast your vote."

In other words, it was impossible for any of us to leave our ballot blank or abstain from the vote altogether. Several students were visibly troubled over this. This was a very threatening exam for students who felt like they'd amass censure votes.

*'By this weekend, one student from this class was going to disappear.'* I thought, so what would be my next move?.....

During lunch break, the Ayanokouji Group decided to take advantage of the free time to hold a discussion at the cafe. We discussed on voting between the three idiots and Koenji. After going back to our classroom the class still in a dark mood ever since the announcement of the special exam.

### ***Time skip 8:00 PM***

Matsushita sent me a message containing a screenshot of another message.

The message:

*We transferred an initial deposit of 200,000 points to your account.*

*proof: image.png*

*We will transfer another 300,000 points if Ayanokouji Kiyotaka will be expelled after the end of exam, the other 32 recipients who belong to your class were also sent this message. If this message was leaked to others, you will be the one we will target. The other 32 students would be anonymous so that to prevent leakage. At the end of exam just message this number and send a confirmation if you cast your censor vote on the named individual. So we can tally votes and calculate the*

amount of points that you will receive. If all 33 of you all voted, 300,000 points will be sent to each of you.

-Mr.NoticeMeSenpai

Matsushita: [So what will you do now?]

Me: [Maybe I'll try something, but just don't do anything reckless yet or else you'll be targeted next.] Well I already knew what I'll do I'm just playing dumb since I don't really fully trust her yet.

Matsushita: [Are you perhaps worried about me?]

Me: [Who knows]

Matsushita: [Baka!!!]

While chatting with some trivial things with Matsushita, Kei suddenly called me. As I answered her call....

Kei: "Kiyotaka I think you're in trouble.!" Kei said in a visibly worried voice.

Me: "What's wrong" playing dumb as if I don't know what she's talking about.

Kei: "Someone's planning to expel you."

Me: "Is that so?"

Kei: "Mou! at least be worried, even a little."

Me: "You're the who's worried too much."

Kei: "W-well of course I'm worried Baka!" She sighed "So what are we going to do, and who do you think the seven students who were not part of this?"

Me: "Me. My friends, Keisei, Haruka, Akito, and Airi. There's also Horikita, and Hirata. I think the sender knows the personality of Hirata that he's an ally of all."

Kei: "Hmmm, So what will I do?"

Me: "Nothing for now, I'll observe the situation for now"

Kei: "Ok."

We chatted for a while then deleted the the call history as usual.

### ***Wednesday***

As I entered the classroom, the dark and gloomy aura yesterday has disappeared, with the exception of the other 6. They chatted like nothing happened Yesterday. As I was on my seat most of them glance at me from time to time and quickly avert their eyes ones I looked at them.

"What do you think happened?" my neighbor asked.

"Who knows, maybe their just trying to divert their attention to that exam." I lied as I already knows what's already happening.

"....Maybe you're right."

And with that classes continued as usual.

### ***Time skip after class***

After I've gone back to the dorms I message Kamuro.

Me: [Hey Kamuro.]

Kamuro: [What do you want?] blunt as usual huh.

Me: [Are you still with Sakayanagi?]

Kamuro: [Yeah.]

Me: [Please tell her that I want to meet up with her privately, maybe in a Karaoke room. I have something to discuss with her.]

Kamuro: [Ok, wait a moment.]

.....

Kamuro: [She said she can meet you around 6:30 later]

Me: [Okay. Thank you.]

### ***At the Karaoke 6:25PM***

"Good evening to you Ayanokouji-kun" greeted Sakayanagi with a smile.

"Good evening Ayanokouji." Kamuro also greeted.

"Yeah, Good evening both of you."

"So will this be a matter where Masumi-san can hear?"

"I think it's not, Sorry for this Kamuro but I think it's a private matter that we're going to discuss."

"Is that so? Will I wait for you or should I go home now? I think I need to rest." asked Kamuro bluntly to Sakayanagi.

"I think I can manage with Ayanokouji-kun here, you should go home for now. Thank you Masumi-san, and Good night."

"Yeah, later Ayanokouji."

"Thank you for understanding Kamuro, Goodnight."

And with that Kamuro has left.

"Fufufufu, she really seems became close to you Ayanokouji-kun, when she meets me or when we part ways she doesn't even greet me or say her goodbyes."

"Considering what you've done to her I guess it's natural, and besides I think we really enjoy each others company."

"Huhu, for Ayanokouji-kun to say that to Masumi-san, it makes me jealous." she said as she wiped her non-existent tears. "So? What we'll be discussing?"

"It's about the special exam." I answered "Do you know who's supplying the points to expel me."

"What do you mean?" she asked as she tilted her head curiously.

"Looks like you don't know."

I sighed and explained what's happening to me and this Mr.NoticeMeSenpai is targeting me.

"Fufufu, what an interesting idea. To think someone will go that far just to expel a Kouhai." she said "But before that, why do you think that this exam is being implemented?"

"Who knows? But I never imagined that your father is someone to

implement an absurd exam like this. Well yesterday I only have two theories to why this exam is implemented" I answered "No, more likely forced, but last night I came onto a third one."

"Interesting, can you tell me these 'theories' you came up with?"

"First, 'that man' did do something to your father to make him or forced him to approved the exam. Second, the student council is involved since Mr.NoticeMeSenpai is targeting me, but I think the student council doesn't have that power to implement something like this exam, so it's probably a high ranking official in the school."

"Fufufufu, 'that man' you're talking about, is it your father?" I nodded "so the third reason?"

"The third one is a mixed of the first and second reason. Something had happened to your father and Mr.NoticeMeSenpai is taking advantage of it."

"As expected of you Ayanokouji-kun."

"So? Care to elaborate? You already know what's going on behind the scenes right?" I asked.

"Yeah, my father is temporarily kicked out due to some false claims and issues, he was replaced by a man named Tsukihiro."

"I can only conclude that 'that man' is involve."

"I also think so, since he's also an high ranking official that worked for the government." she said "And also, I think that he's the one who's supplying the points to the student council to expel you."

"Yeah, since he really want to take me back to that place."

"So what are you planning to do now?"

"Say, Sakayanagi when you said that You will bury me on the first day we talked, that's not what all it is right?"

"What do you mean?"

"What you really wanted to bury was the White Room itself, right?" I asked, as Sakayanagi who had her usual smug smile grew even wider, which to be honest felt creepy for some reason. "So I have a proposal, help me protect my freedom."

"Fufufufu, and what will I get?" Sakayanagi still asked even though she already know my answer.

"I'll help you with the Destruction of White Room after we graduate."

"Fufufufu HAHAAHA. Interesting, I never really imagined that you also hated that place, for you to want to destroy it." she said with an unusual and louder laugh "....So how will we do things?"

"I never really hated or liked that place in the first place but I think I'm thankful because of the abilities I learned. But now that I think about it, do I really need to end my freedom when I graduated or possibly expelled for some reason?" I thought as I pondered over and over again if I really wanted to continue this

freedom.

"I'll join you in Class-A, you will supply the points, in the next special exam and starting in our second year I won't hold back anymore."

"That's a good idea since you can move more freely if you are in Class-A." she said "But unfortunately our class doesn't have enough points to take you in."

"How many points do you have?" I asked

"13 million"

"Ok, I currently have 5.5 million."

"Hmmm, considering the current position of your class, can you tell me how do you have that much?" she asked

"I really can't tell the details but let's just say something happened in the right place on the right time while I'm on a night walk."

"Fufufu, is that so? So how about the remaining points?"

"I guess I will go on another night walk later." I'll talk to the elder Horikita later and set the conditions, on his previous proposal.

"Fufufu, a night walk with the former SCP?"

"You're well informed huh? So how did you know?" I asked

"Just a some deduction?" she answered tilting her head. "Considering the involvement of the current SCP and his obsession of attention to the former SCP."

"I really didn't want to involve myself in their affairs, but I guess he succeed in making me act."

"Fufufufu, I guess those defects will regret their decision once they learned that the one they sacrificed for some mere points is the Mastermind of Class-C(formerly D). So when will you plan to move to our class?"

"I guess a day before the exam? I still have some things to do."

"Ok, I'll just inform my classmates that 'X' will join our class, I'm really excited to see their reactions when they learned that it's you. Is it alright to say that you're my childhood friend for you to be easily accepted?"

"I guess you can do that, to make things more simpler on your side. And I'll call you Arisu from now on, to make it more believable."

'Fufufu, my poor maiden's heart' Arisu thought

"Yeah, thanks Ki-yo-ta-ka—kun." she teased.

After we said our goodbyes, I decided to go back to my room and have a meeting with the elder Horikita. I need information to stop to my current class from crumbling when I set my plans in motion. First I need the information regarding Hirata since he's still hiding something he didn't tell me about his past. Second the confirmation of Kushida's past. And finally some important information about



Nagumo.

"Let's get down to business shall we?" he asked with a smirk on his face.

"I'll help you with your troubles with Nagumo."

"Oohhh?" he's surprised with my sudden cooperation as his smirk grew even wider. "So what will be your conditions?"

"Straight to the point huh" I muttered "First. I need the information related to my classmates, the important first year and second year students, can you still do that as the former SCP?"

"No, I lose the authority since I'm not the the SCP anymore, but I think I can ask Kiriya to help you with that." he answered "But can you answer my question first?"

"If I can answer it."

"When I'm still the President, I can't find any information about you, so my question is why there were no information regarding you?"

"I'm homeschooled and this is my first school I supposed." I answered, well since the White Room is a very confidential place I suppose it's normal that there's no information about it that the student council can get.

"Hmmm, Is that so?" He said looking at me confirming if I'm lying "Then continue with your conditions."

"Second, I want you to give me all the excess points you can give, since you already lose the lifeline ever since saving Tachibana-senpai from the mixed training camp you don't have enough points to do that anymore right?"

"Yeah, I think we have around 4-5 million excess points."

"So do you agree?"

"I think I don't have any choice, but first tell me what will you do about him."

"Just a graduation present before you leave. I can't expel him now, all I can do is make him lose his position."

"Ohhh you sure are confident aren't you?"

"Well it will now have a 100% success rate since you already accepted my terms."

"HAHAHA. I hope this graduation gift you're talking about will make me leave the school at peace."

This is the first time I saw the elder Horikita laugh. If I took a video of him laughing maybe I can sell it to earn more points...

We chatted a little before going back to the dorms. Looks like everything is going well.

-----

-----

-----

-chan ftw

## Chapter 3: Moving to Class-A Part 2

### *Thursday*

Last night Ishizaki reached out to me asking if I can help Ryuen, but I didn't reply with my confirmation yet since I also have my own troubles... for now. I also asked Ryuen to send a message to Kushida to lure her in my plan, I chose Ryuen mainly because he also knows the other side of Kushida, and I think Kushida will comply since her school life is at stake.

On my way to school I was chatting with Ichinose about the circumstances of our classes regarding the special exam, she says that she really didn't want any of her classmates or should I say friends in her class to be expelled.

"Can you use the points you're saving?" I asked

"To tell you the truth we're still lacking around 4 million points, but I think it will be ok since Nagumo-senpai said he'll help us,"

"You still trust him huh?"

"....Eh are you p-perhaps worried?"

"Of course I am considering what he did to you, so what does he want this time?"

"I-is that so?..... Thank you as always Ayanokouji-kun for everything. You don't need to worry, I think it will be ok this time hehehe...." She said with a beet red face, and looked away as if asking she wanted to avoid the details.

"Well all I can say is don't let your guard down, Ichinose."

"Yeah, thank you. What about you? Will you be alright, Ayanokōji-kun?"

"Well, it's hard to say... I'm not a very important student in my class."

"Then, if you're alright with it, I may be able to work something out."

"Meaning?"

"Since I have a praise vote I can use on someone in another class, I could use it on you."

"I think you should consider a better candidate other than me, I'm not worthy of your praise vote Ichinose."

"That's not true at all! Rather, I honestly think it would be the most justified vote in the entire exam. It's meant to be for someone

worthy of praise in another class. Yeah, I can't think of anyone more worthy than you, as the one who saved me."

"I see. Well, then, if something comes up, I'll reach out to you."

"Sweet. I'll remember that."

"Good morning Honami." I heard someone call out to Ichinose from behind us.

"Good morning to you, Asahina-senpai."

"Well aren't you looking lively today? By the way, you two are in separate classes, right? You guys must be on pretty good terms then, yeah?"

"Err, yes. He's a good friend..." Ichinose seemed a little embarrassed with her answer.

"Oh~? A good friend, huh?" It would've caused fewer misunderstandings if she hadn't responded like that.

"Well, whatever. Anyway, I'd like to borrow Ayanokōji-kun for a bit, is that alright?"

"I understand. Well then, Ayanokōji-kun, I'll be going on ahead." With no particular signs of discontent, Ichinose bowed her head, following along with Asahina's request.

"Sorry Honami. See ya."

"Oh no! Please excuse me."

"She's a real good kid isn't she? Cute. Smart. Even among the second-years, nobody has anything bad to say about her."

"That's true. Ichinose seems quite popular with pretty much everyone among the first-years as well."

"Could it be that you've managed to gain her affection?" It seemed that Ichinose's somewhat unnatural behavior hadn't gone unnoticed.

"No way." Ichinose aside, I wanted to keep my time with Asahina as short as possible. It'd raise suspicions if we were to be seen by one of Nagumo's underlings "If you have business with me, I'll hear you out."

"How boring. Well whatever. I happened to see the two of you acting all buddy buddy, so I wanted to tell you something."

And with that we had a quick serious discussion on what Nagumo had offered her to lend the remaining points to Ichinose. The condition he set for lending the points to her is for the two of them to get into a relationship. Considering everything Nagumo had done so far, this definitely seemed like something he'd do.

"Is he really desperate for Ichinose to go that far?"

"Ehh?? Are you perhaps worried about her?"

"Maybe? The way you said things earlier. Aren't you perhaps the one who's worried about either of them?"

"You're kinda implying that I have feelings for that guy?" I nodded "No, it's the opposite considering what he has done to

Honami. And Honami's the one I'm worried about since she's my favorite Kouhai."

"It's like you're expecting that I will do something to help your favorite Kouhai considering you told me all of this things. Aren't you suppose to be with Nagumo's side?"

"I think he should stop with schemes like this. It leaves some bad taste in my mouth." she replied "And besides I'm not exactly siding with him, I'm neutral to the matter he's been doing, since I'm the one who manage our own class, while he's dealing with the student council."

"So you're saying in your class matters, you have a much an higher authority than him?"

"Yes, and besides I'm not really interested in his future plans in the school as the SCP. What matters to me is we maintain our position as Class-A until graduation. That's why sometimes I go along with his schemes, so that he won't target any of our classmates with his position as president unlike those other students in our year in the lower classes who oppose him and got them expelled."

"This is some valuable information senpai, are you ok on giving me this?"

"I don't know but you will do something to help Honami right?"

"Who knows."

"Hmmm is that so?.....Well anyways that's all for me. Bye bye"

After that talk I headed to our classroom, and again the gazes of my classmates fell to me and quickly averted their eyes. As I sat down I received a message from the elder Horikita containing a file about what we talk about last night. Looks like Kiriya really worked fast especially if the orders are from the elder Horikita.

At lunch break, Kushida was called by the student council. 'So Ryuen succeeded in luring her huh' I thought.

Today and tomorrow will be a busy day. I guess I'll answer Ishizaki's request regarding the matter of helping Ryueen by also making a deal with Ichinose.

### ***Kushi-clown POV***

Ryuen-kun blackmailed me to report the dirt I have against Ayanokouji-kun to have him expelled, mainly because he is 'X' the one who leads our class behind the scenes. If I didn't report him he will post the recording he had in the school forums, that I betrayed my classmates and tell my other side to them. I can't let that happen no matter what, I have to keep my standing in this school as the angel they know.

Wait, if he knows I have dirt on Ayanokouji-kun is he perhaps

there when I threatened that gloomy bastard? So that's why Ryuuen-kun knows that I have a other side when I asked for assistance to expel Horikita...

So basically Ryuuen-kun lied to me that he saw through my act when he first interacted with me? That's the only conclusion I have since my acting is perfect.

Shit more questions comes out of my mind.

There was also that message that sent me 200,000 points, and they said that they will send another 300,000 if that gloomy guy is expelled. So another entity wants him expelled since they know he is the mastermind of our class.?

It is impossible that the sender is in our year, with the sole reason of the lack of points just to expel another student from another class, and besides if they have the points wouldn't it be better if they just recruit him?

So that means the sender is in a higher year and has a lot of power and points to orchestrate that kind of scheme. Meaning the SCP is involve, is what I concluded but I'm not still 100% sure about that. That's why I have to win this gamble that the SCP is involved.

So I made an appointment to them.

Lunch time, I was on my way to the student council now.

### ***Mr.NoticeMeSenpai POV***

Kushida is now sitting in front of me,

"So, what's the appointment for?" I asked

"I have to report a sensitive topic." she replied with some tears in her eyes. If I didn't go through the files that the student council have I will have trouble dealing with this two faced bitch.

"Is it something that the other members can't hear?" I asked and she nodded "Kiriya and Nazuna leave us alone for a while."

When they left the room, leaving us alone... I gently asked "So did something happened?"

"Y-yeah, actually Ayanokouji-kun" sniff "my classmate r-raped me."

Ohoh? This isn't something I can't let pass, this isn't something she can lie upon mainly because this is a serious matter. Isn't it a good chance? if I can expel him without using the remaining points that has been provided I will earn around 50% more points with my contract with the Acting-Director. But before that I will have to confirm if she has the evidence to support her claim.

"What?!" I acted like I'm really surprised. "This is a serious matter, having a rapist in the school grounds is unforgivable, but before that do you have evidence that it actually happened?"

"Yeah, I have my crumpled uniform, I think you can verify he's

fingerprint in there." she replied while still crying. "By the way senpai, are you the one who's behind the message that was sent to me and the others? I really want him to be expelled \*sob and I think I still feel scared when he's looking at me."

So she figured it out that I was involved in that.

"Yeah I am, but don't worry about that I will have him expelled by tomorrow. I will hold a trial with some police officers to have him kicked out and arrested, since rape is a serious matter."

"Senpai can I ask you to keep it a confidential trial, I really want to stand strong and have my peace of mind after the trial, and I don't want my friends to learn that I am raped because they will surely avoid me." she said while tears were still falling in her eyes.

"Yes, we will hold the trial with me, the vice president, the police and your homeroom teacher."

I will just inform his teacher just right before the trial, that way he can never prepare.....

### ***Kiyo POV 4:00 PM***

I was with Hirata in his room he didn't attend his club for the past days now ever since the announcement of the exam. He looked depressed and dark circles has formed around his eyes. I need to get over with this quickly since I will have to meet Ibuki, Ishizaki and Ichinose later.

I need to properly use the information that Kiriyama gave me

"Say you're still hiding something about your friend, when you told me your story right?" I asked to break the silence "He committed suicide and and still in coma, then you get rid of the bullying through violence."

Hirata looked at me with eyes wide opened "H-how did you know that?"

"How I know it is not important right now, what matters is you took action. Even now in our class even with that unreasonable exam you're still taking action, even though you know that the result will be the same, that someone will be expelled."

"S-stop don't say anything sad anymore."

"No, Hirata I won't, Say, who do you think is at fault when someone on our class leaves this coming Saturday?"

"...."

"Is it the school? Is it Horikita? Is it me? or Is it the one who will be expelled?" I took Hirata's collar and look in his eyes "It's you, you're the one who's at fault."

"W-why? I tried so hard to find a solution even now I'm still trying."

"Yeah, it's because of that. You act like a hero, wanting your ideals to be realized without any sacrifice. You took the effort so that you can protect everyone of us, but in the end it's still futile due the nature of this unreasonable exam that the school forced us."

"So what should I do?"

"Nothing, you took leadership but didn't anticipate an exam like this. That's why it's your fault. If you did what Ichinose did like with her class taking points every month and save them, I think we can save the one who will be expelled, but you didn't right?"

"Why? why are you being so cruel right now?"

"It's because no one will blame you when the exam ends, because all of our classmates knows that you have done whatever you can to save us." I said "That's why you have to stop dreaming!" I added in a cold voice

"This... This is your true nature, isn't it? Your words are so terrible, ruthless, cold..."

I could see tears start welling up in Hirata's right eye.

And before long, he started crying in front of me.

"You're free to wish for whatever you want. But if you really want to see your wishes come true, you at least need to fight for it until the very end. Strive to do whatever you can. There's no other way. If there end up being expulsions along the way, you have no other choice but to accept it. Even so, you still have to keep moving forward."

"But... Then... How do I vent frustrations...? Do I have to keep moving forward all alone? Bottling up everything deep inside?"

"Not at all. When you're feeling troubled, you can rely on your classmates. Horikita, Sudou and Ike, Mii-chan and Shinohara, it doesn't matter who. You can vent your frustrations to whoever it is that you rely on. We're all in this together."

"I... I... I wonder... if it's okay for someone like me to lead everyone...?"

"It's alright. As you are now, it's okay for you to take the lead."

I placed my hand on his shoulder.

"Thank you... Thank you, Ayanokouji-kun..."

"No, just prepare yourself on the aftermath of the exam, I know it will be hard especially for someone like you."

**6:00PM**

After Hirata calmed down and sorted out his feelings regarding the exam. We said our goodbyes and I proceeded to Ichinose's room to make a deal with her or more likely to be the middleman in their deal.

"Ichinose, Asahina-senpai told me about Nagumo's offer"

"Is that so? Sorry for making you worry about someone like me."



"No, that's not it. I came up with a solution."

"Ehhh?!!"

"But I think I should let you decide first if you will take it or not." I inquired "Ishizaki and Ibuki wanted to save Ryuen. Your class will cast praise votes on Ryuen to cancel the censor votes while they will lend you the points you needed."

"I think....No, I will accept their offer since we got matching interest."

"And besides I don't want you to be Nagumo's girlfriend and I don't want you to be in that situation again."

"..... T-thank you Ayanokouji-kun, you're always helping me and I don't know how to repay your kindness." replied Ichinose with a beet red face.

"You're welcome, I guess it's only natural since your one of my important friends."

"Important.... Ehehehe, Uhm Ayanokouji-kun can I call you by your first name?? you can call me Honami if you want hehe." she embarrassedly asked.

"Sure I don't mind Honami." As I called her by her first name, she averted her eyes on me with a much redder face than before.

"Y-yeah... Kiyotaka-kun"

"So shall we go then and inform them your decision??"

"Yeah"

### ***Around 7:30PM in Karaoke***

As Ishizaki and Ibuki arrived "Yo Ayanokouji sorry for making you wait....."

Naturally, Ibuki and Ishizaki were surprised upon seeing Ichinose. They had probably never imagined that they would meet this person here with me.

"Hmmmmmm" Having seen Ichinose, Ibuki finally seemed to understand the big picture of what was going on. "We've got matching interests, don't we Ichinose?"

"It sure looks like it, Ibuki-san."

"Huh? What do you mean, Ibuki?" Ishizaki tilted his head to the side, still unable to put all the pieces together.

"Ishizaki. Nobody's crazy enough to actually want to save Ryuen. Even if, hypothetically speaking, someone were to show up and say they'd help vote for him, there's no way to know whether they'd really stick to their word or not. Although... There are exceptions to that..."

"I-Is that so... Then, does that mean Ichinose and everyone in Class B are gonna...!?"

"Yup. I'll appeal to everyone in Class B and ask them to cast every

single one of our forty praise votes for Ryūen-kun. In return, Ibuki-san will cover the private points we're missing."

It was a sure-fire strategy that could only be used once. And with that they resolved both of their problems.

"Thank you, Ayanokouji for coming up with this idea." said Ishizaki

"Yeah, thanks to Kiyotaka-kun idea both of our problems are resolved hehehe."

"Well at the end of the day it was your decision and I think it's just a coincidence that both Ishizaki and Asahina-senpai told me both of your problems, Honami." I clarified. "And besides I owe Ryūen earlier."

"Wait you and Ichinose-san are that close to call each other your first names?" asked Ishizaki, who was surprised by how close me and Honami are.

"Hehehe, well you can say that were close friends and I owe him a lot." replied Honami bashfully.

"Hmmm Is that all??" teased Ishizaki as Honami became more flustered.

"That's not what important right now Ishizaki! What do you mean you owe Ryūen, Ayanokouji?" asked Ibuki ignoring Ishizaki's teasing.

"Well, you'll know in a few days."

"Tsk. Being vague as usual."

Well all things considered both of their problems are now resolved.

### ***Around 10:00PM back to the dorms***

The elder Horikita called me informing regarding the trial that will happen tomorrow.

"Will you be alright tomorrow?" He asked.

"I guess, can you please relay this to Kiriyama-senpai....again ....."

-----  
-----

-----

-chan ftw

## Chapter 4: Moving to Class-A Part 3

### *Friday*

Chabashira-sensei messaged me to not attend any of my classes. She didn't tell the details, but I already know what's this about. At around 8:00AM I met with her at the faculty's front door and walked together to the student council's office.

"So, what did I do this time?" I asked pretending that I didn't know the circumstances.

"Kushida has.... a rather disturbing report about you."

"Kushida? about what?"

"She reported that you assaulted her. Did you really do it?"

"Who knows." my typical answer "So what about homeroom?"

"Don't dodge my question!" she exclaimed "....I had Chie take over for a while."

"Hmmm... about what you asked..... I think I will be kicked out."

"What?!!!"

She shouted when were already in the front of the student council office. I just ignored her as I entered the room. There are currently two tall police officers who are well built, President Nagumo, Vice-President Kiriyaama, and Kushida who are in the room.

"Welcome Ayanokouji, you sure took your time. And sensei please refrain from shouting in the hallways." Nagumo said with a wide smirk on his face

"... Sorry about that." Chabashira-sensei replied.

"So who's side will you take between the two of your students?"

"I'm not going to take sides. I will be neutral on this matter" she replied.

"So let us begin, Vice-President Kiriyaama please start the briefing."

"Good Morning everyone. We will tackle the report of Kushida here who was presumably assaulted by her classmate Ayanokouji, both students were from Class-C. Kushida said that she was called by Ayanokouji in the rooftop and was assaulted. When they were alone in the rooftop where there were no cameras are found, Kushida stated Ayanokouji has done the act."

"So, Ayanokouji do you have anything to say in your defense." said Nagumo with a smirk

"..... That statement was false." I said with my usual monotone

voice and faced Kushida "That's false charge you know, Kushida."

Kushida started tearing up, nice acting "\*sob after the horrible thing you did to me, you act like you didn't do \*sob any perverted things to me, after what you....you also took my first ti.... Huaaah!" she cried, a whole lot.

"You really are good at acting Kushida. Now I wonder why you didn't join the drama club."

"Acting you say?"

"ha ha ha" I tried to laugh in my monotone voice which made them more annoyed since I didn't took the matter seriously "Your first time huh? Nagumo-senpai why don't you fuck her yourself now to see if there is blood that will come out just to confirm that I took her so called 'first time'?" unless you swing that way.....

They had their eyes wide open with shock due to my statement, even the police who were just observing the trial are also shocked to my statement.

"Ayanokouji! stop using such vulgar words!" said Chabashira-sensei with some disgust looks in her eyes.

"Oi Ayanokouji stop your stupid nonsense and perverted jokes already this is a serious matter."

"Yeah I agree that it's a serious matter, but I didn't really do the assault charge you're talking about. Besides do you have evidence that I really assaulted her. Isn't she just making it up just to expel someone who knows their secret?"

"\*sob No!!... I-i was really a-assaulted by him and secret? what are you \*sob talking about?. I-i have evidence that you raped me that night." she said while still sobbing, what a joke "This uniform has his fingerprints."

"There you have the evidence you want Ayanokouji. So do you want to add something?"

This just proved that Nagumo and Kushida doesn't know how fingerprints worked or he didn't do a proper investigation. I think when Kushida told him about her evidence that I have fingerprints on her clothes, he was delighted that he can use this to expel me. But how well this fingerprints are preserved? If it was right after we enrolled into this school, then it's already been around 10-11 months. It's not easy to collect fingerprints from clothing. If it hasn't been kept well, of course it wouldn't be in a decent state for it. I don't think you'll be able to get any fingerprints from something like that at all.

"Evidence huh?" I looked at the police officers and asked "Police-san what is the punishment for false charge of rape? Since this Nagumo gay and Kushida involved you in this stupid farce."

If they answered my question honestly these policemen doesn't

side with that Tsukihiro guy, since he's just here for about a week, I think he can't just send his own men for now. And Arisu's father is not that careless to allow him to move freely since he's just starting here as the Acting-Director.

" 'Nagumo gay' you say! Stop insulting me Ayanokouji, don't you have respect to the student council?"

"I'm not asking you the question Nagumo-gaypai, I'm asking the two policemen here." I said as he twitch a brow in annoyance, while I noticed Kiriya has slight smirk in his face.

"Ehhhem!! to answer your question young man we can charge Kushida with 'Wasting Police Time' due to giving us false information. But it will only happen If you can prove your innocence." So my deduction is right that these policemen are still with Arisu's father and not related to the Acting-director.

***I don't really know what's the punishment for false charge of rape for teenagers, but I'll just go with WASTING POLICE TIME which Google-sensei recommended 'The penalties for giving false information to the police are up to six months in jail and possible fines.' and will just go with it. F for Kushida.....***

"Huh what innocence are you talking about Officer-san? He's already guilty since Kushida has the evidence here."

"Here's the proof my innocence. I hope the you enjoy your life as a juvie for 6 months, Kushida." I said as I played the recording on my phone.

***Recording:***

*"If you tell anyone what you just heard, I won't forgive you."*

*"And if I did tell?"*

*"In that case, I would tell everyone that you raped me."*

*"That's a false charge, you know."*

*"That's okay. It wouldn't be false..."*

*"What are you doing?"*

*"Your fingerprints are on my clothes. That's evidence of my claim. I'm being serious. Understand?"*

*"I understand. I really do. So let go of my hand."*

*"I'm going to leave this uniform in my room without washing it. If you betray me, I'll hand it over to the police. It's a promise."*

*"Hey, Kushida. Which is the real you?"*

*"That's none of your business.".....*

"....." silence enveloped the room, the same voice but a bit darker and colder with a different personality of the Kushida that they knew. They all had surprised looks even the policemen. At first they didn't want to believe that the voice they heard was from her until they looked at Kushida.....

Kushida stopped crying as she now has a surprised.....

No, more like her true nature is exposed and asked me in a slightly dark tone just like in the recording "H-how?? do you... Did Ryuen gave that to you!? Did he tricked me?" she gave away so easily since she heard the recording, meaning she has no more cards left to play.

"Ryuuen? What are you talking about? You're an idiot are you?" I asked these questions to provoke her more.

"Shut up, Shut up, Shut up!!! Just answer my fucking question."

"Do you really think that I will approach you that day without being prepared on confronting you?..... Now Nagumo why so quiet? don't you have something to say?" I said as I turned my face to Nagumo who's been also quiet ever since I showed my evidence. I also glanced at Kiriyama as if saying to now take the lead so that we can deal some more damage to Nagumo.

"..... About that, so Kushida gave me a false report." Said Nagumo after regaining some of his composure.

"What would be the judgement for her case Police-san? this is clearly within the 'Wasting Police Time' charge you said earlier." asked Kiriyama, now do your part, and steal the spotlight of Nagumo.

"Yeah it's clearly within the scope of the offence, since it's also clear that the young man has clear evidence and base on the girls behavior after hearing the recording, we can clearly charge her of the said criminal offence and she will be sent in Tokyo detention house for 6 months." replied one of the policemen and turned to Kushida "So young girl do you still have something to say or any kind of other evidence to reject the evidence of the young man?"

"....." Kushida just sat in silence knowing that she already lost.

"President Nagumo can you handle the final statement to close the case?" asked Kiriyama with a slight smirk as if mocking Nagumo

".... With this Kushida will be expelled and base on the school rules Class-C will lose the 100 class points and will be demoted to Class-D. Chabashira-sensei can I asked you to accompany her to process the papers for her expulsion and offence."

"...Yeah."

"Now, that will be the end of the trial."

As the trial end, Kushida left with the policemen and sensei. Only me, Kiriyama and Nagumo are left. As I was about to go back to the dorms Nagumo approached me and said "Oi Ayanokouji, don't think its over yet."

I just ignored him and left, I'm sure he's really annoyed with the outcome of this trial.

### ***Kushi-clown POV***

SHIT!!!! How did that gloomy guy had that recording.

I'm currently with Chabashira-sensei and the two policemen. How did this happen? I'm not the one who's supposed to be the juvie. Shit!

"You underestimated him too much." said Chabashira-sensei who was beside me

"Shut up!"

"As your teacher I never really expected the class angel of my class to be like this." Don't act dumb you teachers already have our information about our past from our middle school.

"I said you shut up, you're not my teacher anymore."

"Is that so? I guess you're right. You never had a chance with that monster in the first place."

"....."

Monster huh? How I did not realize that Ryuen stopped his hunt for 'X' and just stepped down as the leader after the winter break, so Ryuen and his gang lost to him, to that gloomy guy?

And if he really is the mastermind of our class how did he go unnoticed all this time? If he can manipulate us, his classmates without any of us noticing. ....Ahhhhh so he's a real monster after all.

I just lost my school life just because I let my guard down once, and now I will be sent in a juvenile center for 6 months.

AHHHHHH WHAT A WASTE.

### ***Kiriyama POV***

We have done some damage to Nagumo, now that I was looking at him he really looks frustrated and irritated at the same time. At first I wasn't really sure of Ayanokouji's capabilities, but Horikita-senpai really values him highly. He just made both Kushida and Nagumo dance in the palm of his hand.

I'm looking forward to his next move....

### ***Nagumo-gaypai POV***

That damn Ayanokouji, first the Ichinose now this?

How did it go this way?

But I still have the plan regarding the use of the points supplied by the new Acting-Director. Just you wait Ayanokouji, tomorrow you will feel betrayed by your class. Because tomorrow will be the last day that you will be in this school.

Also, Ichinose will have no other choice but to accept my offer of lending her points by being in a relationship with me, since no one will lend her the points just to save one of her stupid friends.

HAHAHAHA in the end I will win.

---

***EXTRA, Beer-chan POV***

I thought this is MY ROUTE but why I don't have any screen time for two chapters!!!!



**-chan ftw**



## Chapter 5: Moving to Class-A Part 4

After the trial ends I've gone back to the dorm, ate my food and took a nap.

I woke up and it's currently 4:00PM.

I'm waiting for the Ayanokouji Group and one more person, since I will discuss some things about what will happen tomorrow.

*\*knock knock*

"So Kiyopon what are we going to talk about, and why are you absent earlier?" asked Haruka

"Come in, it's a very important discussion regarding the exam tomorrow."

"You sound a lot more serious." said Akito

"Well there will be a lot of changes that will happen starting tomorrow, but let's wait for the other person before we start."

*Around 4:10PM \*knock knock*

"Come in Kei. No one noticed you right?"

"Yeah I used the stairs as usual."

"Ka-karuizawa-san?"

"So Kiyotaka what's this discussion about?" asked Kei

"K-kiyotaka?? you call each other with your first names? Wait Kiyopon what's the meaning of this?! You're close?" Haruka asked as Airi stayed in silence glancing between me and Kei. While both Keisei and Akito acts suspicious with our relationship

"Yeah you can say that." I answered "So before you can come up with some kind of misunderstandings in your head let's start the discussion"

"Y-yeah"

"Well before you misunderstood our relationship you can call her my partner in crime or sidekick." I said "And I'm 'X' the one's Ryuen looking for in the winter break, together with Kei we act behind the scenes."

"Wait Kiyotaka why are you revealing all of this now?" asked Kei while all the others looked surprised with some kind of confusion

"Wait! wait wait were all confused with that sudden revelation." said Haruka as the others nodded

"Y-yeah Haruka's right, .....so who knows in our class that you are the mastermind or 'X'?" asked Keisei

"Based on the information they know on what happens behind the scenes Kei > > Horikita > Hirata." I answered "Hirata knows that I'm 'X' that Ryuuken's looking for last December and only knows that I work behind the scenes but never know the exact details, while Horikita knows the old midterm exam questions, Sudou's near expulsions, and the island exam. Kei almost knew everything starting from the Zodiac exam and I also told her what happened on the previous ones." I didn't mention Matsushita to avoid some trouble.

"Wait Kiyotaka, so basically the real reason we won in our group in the Zodiac exam was because Karuizawa is the real VIP that time?" asked Keisei as he realized the fact.

"Yeah I'm the VIP and Kiyotaka was the one who manipulated our group that time." answered Kei with a proud expression on her face.

"But more importantly aren't you in the middle of every class achievements?"

"Well let's stop talking for the past for now, I will tell everything that can be told later if we have time." I said as I take their attention "Like I said it will be regarding tomorrow, and the matter you told me from the first day of the exam Kei."

"What are you talking about Kiyotaka?" asked Akito

"The class will cast their censor votes on me, and expel me."

"HUUUH?!"

"You can't be serious right?"

"Well I think it's only natural that you act surprised mainly because the SCP is the one who's targeting me."

""What?!""

"So I was right huh, the one who sent that message is Nagumo?" asked Kei

"What message are you talking about Karuizawa-san?" asked Haruka

Kei took her phone out and showed the message,

The message:

*We transferred an initial deposit of 200,000 points to your account.*

*proof: image.png*

*We will transfer another 300,000 points if Ayanokouji Kiyotaka will be expelled after the end of exam, the other 32 recipients who belong to your class were also sent this message. If this message was leaked to others, you will be the one we will target. The other 32 students would be anonymous so that to prevent leakage. At the end of exam just message this number and send a confirmation if you cast your censor vote on the named individual. So we can tally votes and calculate the amount of points that you will receive. If all 33 of you all voted, 300,000 points will be sent to each of you.*

"W-wait what's that supposed to mean and why is the SCP even targeting you Kiyotaka?" asked Kesei

"Yeah and why would they even waste a huge amount of points just to expel you?" asked Akito

"As I said before maybe because I'm the mastermind behind the scenes? they didn't know my connection with Kei that's why they also sent the message to her. Also I think it's the obsession of attention of the current SCP to the elder Horikita."

"What do you mean by obsession?" asked Airi

"Remember the race that we had during the sport's festival?" they nodded "It seems the elder Horikita said something unnecessary that made Nagumo target me."

"Unnecessary? What do you mean?" asked Keisei

"My capabilities. Well basically I'm holding back in academics and physical activities I guess"

"W-what? WHY?!"

"Wait Keisei let him finish explaining first." Nice follow-up Akito (AkiBro Gigachad)

"Yeah, and just like he said there is a reason for that, which I also" said Kei

"Well first I don't want to stand out and have a peaceful life since this is the first school I had mainly because I'm homeschooled for the rest of my life." I said mixing some lies with the truth "Second if I didn't do that it will be harder for me and Kei to move behind the scenes and gain unnecessary attention, and besides as I said before I want to keep my peaceful life here meaning you, my friends are included in that. I want to maintain that kind of life even now."

**\*I will make Keisei easier to convince and a bit more trusting to make it easier to write(unlike the recent y2 v2 and v5 if I'm not mistaken).**

"I respects Kiyotaka's wishes and don't blame him for that. And besides without Kiyotaka, we will still have a huge gap of class points between classes. Unlike Koenji who doesn't help at all even though he has the ability to help us reach a higher class." Kei added as I nodded

"I got it Kiyotaka, ....but the real problem is if we are the ones who are targeted right?" Asked Akito, he catch up fast I think he knows where this conversation is heading.

"What do you mean Miyatchi?" ask Haruka as she tilt her head in confusion

"Basically like what happened with Tachibana-senpai during the mixed training camp, Nagumo will try to target someone who's

close to him." He answered

"So that's it huh? Since you have a reason I can't retort into, I guess I'll just let it go for now, and all things considered you just don't want us to get in between your fight with the SCP. So what will you plan on doing now Kiyotaka?" asked Keisei

"I'll join Class-A."

""""WHAAAT???!""""

"Wait if you do that isn't that betrayal to the class?" asked Keisei

"Wait Yukimuu isn't the class who were betraying Kiyopon since they are easily swayed by some mere points?"

"Yeah Kiyotaka-kun didn't do anything wrong" said Airi

"Well I guess you're right but how will you manage the points? The voting will start tomorrow."

"Well Arisu will help me."

"Wait Arisu?? You mean Sakayanagi-san?!" asked Kei with a grumpy tone

"Yeah"

"W-what's your r-relationship with Sakayanagi-san, Kiyotaka-kun??" asked Airi

I covered my ears as if knowing what will be their reaction before I answered her question "Well, we're childhood friends."

""""WHHATT???!""""

"Well she owes me a favor when we were little, that's why she will help me." I lied since I can't say the real reason "That's why we should disband the Ayanokouji group."

"Wait wait Kiyopon even though you're switching classes doesn't that sound too cruel??"

"I think that's not what he meant Haruka" said Akito

"Yeah, we will disband it on the surface but we're still friends like always, We'll keep it up until I deal with Nagumo." I said, but there is still the Acting-Director that I will have to deal with, that's why I can't let my guard down.

"Is that so? You make me nervous with your sudden statements Kiyopon." Haruka said as she and Airi sighed in relief

"But aren't you too confident? It's like you made it sound easy dealing with Nagumo." asked Akito.

"Don't worry Kiyotaka is really reliable even the SCP will be no match for him." said Kei as if she's a proud girlfriend.

"Ehh? You really trust our Kiyopon, I really never expected that side of you, Karuizawa-san."

"Well of course we are partners who worked together from time to time."

"Ehhh? Is that really all?" asked Haruka teasingly

"....Y-yeah, that's all." answered Kei with tint of red in her face as

Airi has a worried look.

"But maybe we should hangout from time to time in secret." said Keisei

"Yeah."

"Ahh by the way Kiyotaka-kun you're absent earlier what happened?" Asked Airi

"Yeah, Kyou-chan was also absent right?"

"I guess it's fine to tell you, Kushida was expelled."

""WHAAAT????!!"" they exclaimed again as I covered my ears

"Like I said before don't be too loud I'll explain the details"

"Well we're just too surprised by all these kind of developments that are happening."

"Well she's working behind the scenes with Nagumo and she accused me that I raped her." I lied mainly because I was the one who led her to report me that I rape her.

"Rape?! Isn't that a serious matter?." asked Keisei

I explained the other side of Kushida, her false accusation of rape, her betrayal in our class by siding with Ryuen from before, some bits of her past. I also let them hear the recordings I had, the betrayal in sports festival that I got from Ryuen and false accusation when she put my hand in her chest, and told them a bit about what happened earlier.

"W-wait are you sure that's Kyou-chan?"

I think one time Haruka said that Kushida is one of the only few girls she admire and respect. After hearing everything I said with the proofs i had she felt like she was betrayed, as tears began to form in her eyes.

"....I'm really surprised to think that Kushida..."

"Yeah, it's just like she's a devil in angel's disguise."

"....."

"Why didn't you tell me anything about this, Kiyotaka?" asked Kei

"Well both Horikita and I tried to convinced her that we will never let anyone know that she had an another side or her past that Horikita knows since they attended the same middle school." I said "Horikita really tried to put trust between the two of them because she's really one of the people that can help us reach Class-A, but Kushida prioritize her own and never really trusted both Horikita and I."

"So what happened after the trial of Kushida-san after the trial Kiyotaka-kun?"

"Well, she was sent to a juvenile detention center, if I'm not mistaken of the name of the place it's Tokyo Detention House she will stay there for 6 months."

"...."

"Wait isn't 6 months kind of unreasonable?" asked Keisei

"What do you mean isn't being a juvie a good punishment?" Haruka asked in a low voice as if she really can't accept that she was betrayed by Kushida.

"No, I agree with Keisei." Akito answered as if he also seems unsatisfied with the punishment "If Kiyotaka didn't have the evidence he will be labeled as a rapist and his life will be ruined if anyone knows he commit such crime. That's why I think falsifying a crime like this should have a more reasonable punishment." (AkiBro GigaChad)

Keisei and Airi nodded, while Haruka is finally convinced when she heard that it may ruin someone's life. Kei looked at me with a looked that as if she's remembering something..... (spread your legs scene).

After that they asked questions regarding what happened behind the scenes. I answered them while leaving some other details to avoid the topic of Kei being bullied and on what happened in the rooftop which Kei really didn't want to talk about.

After our discussion with the things from the past. It is now 6:00PM I said that I will be having a meeting with Arisu later, bidding their farewells I asked Kei to stay as I had something to discuss privately.

"Are you perhaps going to confess to Karuizawa-san, Kiyopon?" teased Haruka

"Ehhh?!" exclaimed Airi in shock by Haruka's statement

".....No no no, there's no way this love dead boy will do something like that." replied Kei with a slight embarrassed tone in her voice.

"And what if I did?" I asked teasingly

""EHHH?!!""

"No way, Kiyopon will....."

"Th-there's no way you'll do that." said Kei

"Of course, I'm just kidding." I said as I flicked Kei's forehead lightly "Sorry about that."

### ***After they left.....***

"So? What do you want to talk about?." asked Kei with a grumpy tone "Even if you're a love dead boy, don't joke with things like that, it's embarrassing and what if the person take it seriously and assume things?." 'Ahh mou! I let my guard down earlier.' Kei thought in her head

"Sorry about that. I really didn't mean it, it's just that I'm trying to get back to Haruka's teasing."

"Moouu! So?"

"About who will you cast your censor votes tomorrow, aside from me who will the class vote?"

"I mean even if they distributed a million points to each of us, I will never vote for you. As for the second and third place, the girls think about casting censor votes to the three idiots, to warn them that they will be next if they didn't behave."

"Is that so? Can you lead them to make the second most censor votes to Yamauchi and me at first?"

"I think I can, why Yamauchi specifically? Is it Sakayanagi-san's order?"

"Yeah, she said it's revenge since Yamauchi bumped into her and knocked her down in the mixed training camp when they passed each other."

"EHH? She had targeted him just because of something simple like that?"

"Well she's pretty unreasonable for things like that since we were little." I lied I really didn't know about her childhood "For Arisu, that alone might've been more than enough of a reason."

"Ye-eah I'll be careful not to bump into Sakayanagi-san in the future" she said worryingly "Is that all? I think, you can discuss that to your group earlier."

"No, I'll just message them later and tell who they should vote for. You can use Sakayanagi's sudden approach to Yamauchi and say that he can betray the class to make it more reasonable."

"Okay. So? Are we done here? You said you will meet Sakayanagi-san later."

I reached out to my table, opened the drawer and get the two boxes inside. "Here. Advance Happy Birthday and as for the other one is for White day, I think won't be able to give them to you next week since I will be in another class."

### ***Kei POV***

AHHHH MOU!!! I was attacked with the feeling of something tightening inside me and averted my eyes as he greeted me. For some reason, I could feel my heart beating faster and louder.

"Can I open them?" he nodded. As I opened them the first box contains the key chain that I talked about with him in our last phone call, the other one is a larger box which contains a box of white chocolate and other sweets.

"You mentioned in our last phone call that you wanted that keychain that's why I bought it. Again, Kei Advance Happy Birthday." He said with his usual monotone voice. Ahhh I really feel happy that he knows when my birthday is, and I felt sad at the same time since he will switch classes.

"T-thank you Kiyotaka, you really caught me by surprised." I

really mean it literally, I let my guard down again.

"By the way Kei, even if we are in different classes starting tomorrow, no matter what happens or in any worst case scenario I will honor my promised that I will still be your shield until you can stand by yourself or until we graduate."

As he said those words he felt like a guardian angel that will protect me no matter what and I felt reassured, even though I know the deeper darkness he has, it really reassured me as the darkness he carries eats away my own darkness.

Tears welled up in my eyes and I started crying, he hugged me as he patted my head in his other hand, memories of middle school when I was bullied, where no one was there for me suddenly invaded my mind but now it never really matters since a guardian is beside me.

I hope this last forever, but the way he said that the 'worst case scenario'..... So he already knows my feelings that I had for him and rejected me indirectly, but I think I'm fine with it, I just felt really happy from the bottom of my heart that I can consider him....

.....My first, real, and genuine bestfriend.

Thank you Kiyotaka

Thank you Kiyotaka

Thank you Kiyotaka

I thanked him in my mind again and again as I cried for some time.

---

### ***EXTRA, Beer-chan POV***

Author-san you got me really nervous there, I thought it will be a Kei route.

But again, where's my screen time??!!



## Chapter 6: Moving to Class-A Part 5

### *Beer-chan POV 5:00pm*

Finally Author-san!!!

We are in the Karaoke, I'm with Sakayanagi and one of the idiot trio of Ayanokouji's class. Speaking of Ayanokouji my friend, it's been 5 days since the last time we paint together, and we really can't play chess online since he said he's busy dealing with some troublesome stuff, mainly because of this unreasonable exam. I hope that in the spring break the Loli won't make me work hard so that I can invite my friend to spend some time together and hang out with him since I really feel relaxed and at peace when I'm with my friend. But first we need to overcome this special exam and the next one.

Okay back to reality. These previous days the creepy Loli invited this pervert on some secret meetings like this. Why does she do this? Because she said that this pervert bump into her during the mixed training camp, that's why she targeted him.

Why do this in a roundabout way? Well mainly because this Loli is a sadist, her plan makes the pervert have some hope by implanting in his head that our class will cast our praise votes for him, but what this Loli really wants was have him feel despair when he learns tomorrow that he is betrayed.

'What a SADISTIC LOLI' I thought

But this Yamauchi is a real disgusting pervert, he just kept staring at my chest from time to time.

UGHHHH I hate this!!!

"Uhhmm, Yamauchi-kun.... About the special exam tomorrow." the Loli said with a fake childish act

"Yeah what about it?"

"Can you make your classmates cast censor votes to Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun?"

"Ayanokouji again? You seem to have the same target as that sender huh?"

### *Yama-will-be-dead POV*

I'm really becoming popular these days, this is considered another date right? This is the third time Sakayanagi-chan invited me into the Karaoke. On the first date, she was accompanied by Hashimoto,

it's not like I hate that guy, he really seems to get along with everyone, and I think I had a great time. But I hated the fact that I didn't get to flirt with Sakayanagi-chan.

Yesterday she was with that scary guy Kitou, man that was scary I didn't have the chance to really flirt with Sakayanagi-chan AGAIN.

But now it's really different, she's with her friend Kamuro-chan. Two girls at the same time, HAHAAAAHA this is really my popular phase, I will walk toward my harem route. Starting with two girls now, the next month I will have 10 WAAAAHAHA.

"Can you make your classmates cast censor votes to Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun?" asked Sakayanagi-chan in a cute pleading way.

"Ayanokouji again? You seem to have the same target as that sender huh?"

OHHH SHIT I SLIPPED!!! That was supposed to be a confidential information.

"What are you talking about Yamauchi-kun?" she asked as she tilt her head in confusion. KAWAII

"Uhhh....."

"Can't you tell me who that 'sender' is?"

Should I? Won't I become a next target of that sender?

"You said that we had the same target right? Can't you tell me? Don't you trust me Haruki-kun?"

Holy shit she called me by my first name, and the way she said it is so Kawaii!!.

"It's not like it Sakayanagi-chan, it's a confidential matter I don't want to be targeted next."

"You can call me Arisu you know Ha-ru-ki-kun~. And besides won't you trust me, I can protect you as the leader of Class-A, since I think I have a crush on you."

WAAAAHAHAHA just like I thought she really likes me. Did Kamuro-chan just smiled at me? Earlier she had that irritated look when I look at her chest and her face. Seems like my charms has worked on her, I think she's really in love with me now. WAAAAHAHAHA

"Y-yeah I think I will trust you Arisu-chan, if you will really protect me."

"I will Haruki-kun. I promise."

I showed her the message regarding casting censor votes for Ayanokouji. HAAAAHA that gloomy guy will be gone tomorrow and I will receive 300,000 points.

"Ohh this is interesting, it really seems that we had the same target."

"Yeah did that gloomy guy did something to this sender and you?"

"I don't know about that sender, but I will never forgive Ayanokouji-kun."

"WHAT DID THAT GLOOMY BASTARD DID TO YOU ARISU-CHAANN!???"

"I will tell you, but don't be too loud Haruki-kun~."

"Yeah sorry about that Arisu-chan."

"Well Ayanokouji-kun bumped into me in the hallway and knocked me down. But unlike you who apologized in the mixed training camp, he didn't apologize to me and just ignored me. That's why I hated him ever since that day. And I'm using Masumi-san here to get closer to Ayanokouji-kun to trap him and get my revenge."

So Kamuro-chan is a bait to that gloomy bastard. To think Sakayanagi-chan will go that far just because he didn't apologize to her. I'm glad I apologized when I bumped into her during the mixed training camp, and she fell in love with me. Nice job Haruki WAHAHAHAHAHA

"That gloomy guy bastard! I will make sure he will pay for what he did to you Arisu-chan. I will make sure all of my classmates will have him expelled."

"That's reassuring Haruki-kun, as an appreciation I will ask my classmates to cast their praise votes to you, you want that protection point do you?"

"Ehh? Are you serious?"

"Yeah, but you need to gather some praise votes from your classmates for you to guarantee the protection point."

"Yeah, I will."

"So I think we must end our little date now." Oww shit she really called it a date but I want to spend more time with her

"Ehh?"

"You have a lot to do right? And the exam is tomorrow, I think you need time left to convince your classmates now." That makes sense I need to talk to Ken, Kanji and maybe Kushida-chan about this to convince our other classmates. ***(They still didn't know that Kushida got expelled today.)***

"Yeah you're right."

"We can continue this tomorrow after the exam you know~." YOSH! I will have another date tomorrow HAHAAHAHA it's really nice being a handsome guy like me.

"Yeah, I will go now and convince them. You can count on me Arisu-chan, I will make sure that gloomy guy will be expelled!"

"Yeah, bye bye Haruki-kun~"

"Yeah see you later, Arisu-chan and Kamuro-chan."

With that I left. I will receive another 300,000 points tomorrow

and will have another date with Arisu-chan. HAHAAHHAHA

SHIT I DIDN'T GET TO FLIRT WITH ARISU-CHAN AGAIN. Well tomorrow will be the day, the beggining of Haruki's harem. WAHAHAHAHAHA

### ***Beer-chan POV***

It's finally over, I just stayed silent in their whole chat. That guy really irritates me when she looked at me with those lecherous eyes. What a disgusting pervert.

"Good work Masumi-san."

"Well I didn't really do anything. That pervert is too easy to manipulate."

"Yeah, he's a defect after all."

I was really restraining myself to laugh earlier when the Loli is acting cute and the pervert easily took the bait, I smirked a little earlier due to the Loli calling the pervert his first name and obviously he fell on her trap.

"Hey, you really seemed to be good at acting earlier. Now I'm wandering why didn't you join the drama club."

"Fufufu." Now she's using her usual laugh "Was I really that good? But to be honest even if I wanted to join, I can't due to my condition and work as a class leader."

"I supposed you're right."

"You seemed to be a bit angry earlier when that defect called Ayanokouji-kun a 'gloomy guy'."

When that pervert insulted my friend as a 'gloomy guy', I didn't like it or more like I felt anger. I think the last time I experienced this feeling was when I was in elementary where I have someone I can call a friend. And when they were insulted I also felt anger within me.

"Well of course I am, that disgusting pervert insulted my friend."

"Fufufu, to think Masumi-san considered Ayanokouji-kun as her friend, I'm jealous." Tsk, I'll change the topic since this Loli will just tease me.

"Guhh. You creep me out when you're not laughing like that when you're talking to that pervert earlier. Anyways the one who send that message to Ayanokouji do you know who send it? And will he be alright?"

The Loli told me that we will cast our praise votes to my friend to give him the protection point.

But to think someone is using a lot of points just to expel him, and those defects really didn't know that my friend is the real mastermind of their class and they easily got swayed by points to sacrifice a classmate when they're told, they truly are defectives.

To be honest even if he didn't gain the protection point just like what the Loli told me, as long as he's not expelled I guess I'm fine with it.

"Dodging the topic about 'your friend' huh?" she noticed me changing the topic "But to answer your question, everything is going according to plan, and besides you don't have to worry too much since the devised plan I had discussed with Ayanokouji-kun, will make even you surprised by the results."

"Ehh, you changed the plan?" so they changed the plan "And what do you mean by surprise?"

"Fufufu. You'll know later, since I think you'll like it."

"Still vague as ever huh?."

"Of course Masumi-san, that's why I called it a surprise. Fufufufu."

"Yeah yeah, surprise it is. So, can I go now?"

"Yeah for the time being, but we will go out again later around 9:00."

"What for? Tsk, you really make me work hard aren't you?"

"Well it's the surprise I'm talking about and besides...." she paused for a while

"What?"

"Fufufu. We'll go with your friend."

"Okay, I'll go."

"That was a fast reply wouldn't you say?"

"Whatever you say."

And besides I wanted to talk to him.....

### ***Kiyo POV***

I felt really tired with that discussion with the Ayanokouji group and Kei earlier. It is now 9:00PM, since there are no rules on when you can change classes I asked Arisu together with Kamuro (who knows nothing on what's going to happen) to accompany me to go to Mashima-sensei.

"Where are we going this late at night?" Kamuro asked Arisu with an annoyed expression

"You'll know later Masumi-san" answered Arisu, with her usual smug smile.

"Arisu, where do you think is Mashima-sensei?" I asked

"Hey Ayanokouji, why do you call this loli her first name?" Kamuro asked ignoring the mention of Mashima-sensei

"Fufufu, are you perhaps jealous Masumi-san?"

"We're childhood friends I guess, isn't it normal for a childhood friend to use each others first names." I answered

"..... What?!"

"Fufufu, that's right Masumi-san me and Kiyotaka-kun are

childhood friends"

"You didn't tell me that!!" Kamuro exclaimed

"Well you never asked, did you?" I retorted "And besides you can also call me by my first name Masumi."

I never really cared about what they call me so I think she can call me whatever she wants. But suddenly she became quiet.....

"....."

"Are you okay Masumi? Don't you like being called by your first name?"

"Y-yeah I'm okay, it's nothing like that. Can I just call you K-kiyo? I think it's a wonderful nickname."

***To be Continued.....***

---

### ***EXTRA, Beer-chan POV***

"Hey Author-san I'm glad that I had screen time in this chapter, you will include me again next time right?"

"....."

"Hey! don't ignore me!"



-chan ftw

**or**

**will there be another heroine?**

## Chapter 7: Moving to Class-A Part 6

### *Beer-chan POV*

"And besides you can also call me by my first name Masumi."

He called me by my first name, well I supposed it's okay since he's my friend. The last time I called someone in their first name or nickname was when I'm in elementary.

When I'm in elementary everything is normal even for a kinda introverted kid like me, but when I entered middle school me and my little brother transferred to different schools mainly because of my parents work. And because of that I really didn't interact much with my new classmates every time me and my brother transferred to a new school. Well my brother is different since he's an extrovert unlike me who's an introvert type, he got along with his new classmates even if it's just a short time.

I never really hated my parents for it mainly because they worked hard for me and my brother.

As I said each time we transfer to a new school I never really interacted with my new classmates mainly because most of the boys looked at me with perverted eyes which I really hated. While the girls, I'm neutral to them but I never really tried to be close to them since I know that it will never last long.

I think I'm lucky that I never got bullied, even though I act like a loner most of the time. Painting and drawing are my only ways of relaxing and I really put my effort into them. Painting and drawing can make me relaxed but it cannot cure the boredom I had, boredom that developed because deep within me I seek thrill.

One time I passed by in a convenience store, I saw 3 kids who I think 2 years younger than me, they got caught shoplifting . The manager of the store was with them and he called over their parents. Those three doesn't look like they were struggling in life to shoplift something like a..... can of Beer.....?

'Wouldn't it be fun to do something the three of them couldn't do?' that thought cross my mind.

I tried to do it the next day in a different store. After I got the can of beer in my bag and exited the store, I walked my way home. That was fun, looking for the people around me if they will notice what I will do, checking the convex mirror and camera's blind spots

before doing the act, and making sure that I act natural and not suspicious when I exit the store.

When I got home I stared at the can of beer that I hold in my hands, the one I took from that store and remembering the suspense feeling I had while doing the act. 'That was kinda fun' I thought. And with that my boredom was somewhat lifted when I chose to shoplift for the first time.

I think I'm a shitty person doing this just because I'm bored. I continued to shoplift from time to time when I was in the second year of my middle school, and when I started in third year it became a habit. I was never caught not even once, ever since I started to do it, even my parents or my brother doesn't know that I became a habitual shoplifter. Well I really didn't plan to tell anyone, mainly because they will change the way they look at me once they learned. But....

..... 'If I am careful and smart, I will not get caught.' That's what I always thought until I got here in this school, and that Loli caught me and used it to blackmail me. And with that I became her lackey.

The Loli is really a trouble, she always make me escort her, she makes me tail someone, she even sometimes make me cook her lunch. Ughhhh she really is a pain.

But in the end, to think that all of those things that happened led me to make me realized that "I'm not really that bored, I'm just really lonely".

Talking to someone who can understand you, the soothing feeling when we paint together, and the thrill of learning new things just like when he taught me on how to play chess, those things were fun.

"Are you okay Masumi? Don't you like being called by your first name?" Kiyotaka asked.

"Y-yeah I'm okay, it's nothing like that. Can I just call you K-kiyo? I think it's a wonderful nickname." Why did I stutter just calling my friend by a nickname, this is embarrassing.

"Yeah, I don't mind. But if you have a nickname like that for me I think I'll call you with one, Beer-chan?" He teased

"Hey! I told you not to call me that!" I said as I lightly slap his back

"Fufufu, what an interesting nickname Beer-chan." now this Loli is teasing me too.

"Sorry, what about Sumi-chan?"

I don't really mind, my brother and old friends in elementary called me Masu-nee-chan or Masu-chan. Him calling me by that nickname isn't really that bad.



"I guess it's alright, even though it's a little embarrassing, K-kiyo" I stuttered again, What's wrong with me, Masumi!

"Uhhhm No, nevermind I'll just go back with Masumi, since your name suggest beauty and purity. I guess I'll just use Sumi-chan in my inner thoughts or when I'm teasing you??"

Yabai yabai yabai, my body is heating up and my heart beats faster out of embarrassment, on what he just said. How can this idiot friend of mine say those things without being embarrassed.

This feeling is really different from some guys who were trying to hit up on me when I'm alone, it's not the same feeling of disgust that I felt from those perverts.

Could it be.....

"Fufufu. Aren't you glad Masumi-san? Being called a 'beauty' by Kiyotaka-kun."

"W-what are you saying?"

"Well to be honest my first impression of you is a really beautiful girl as your name suggest but purity is gone since the first time I saw you was you took a can of beer in the convenience store."

I felt happy when he said the first thing about beauty, but got a little irritated in his statement about purity. But it's not a bad feeling being teased this way.

"Fufufu, I think we had the same first impression Kiyotaka-kun."

"Hey! that second statement of yours is kinda mean you know."

"Yeah yeah."

### ***Kiyo POV***

"Huhu, Masumi-san you really seem to be closer to him than me, his childhood friend." Said Arisu as she wipe her non-existent tears.

'Well it's just one sided, since you're the only one who knew me as a child.' I thought

"Well of course our Masters(Horikita) are making us work hard that's why we can relate to each other, right Sumi-chan?"

"Yeah, it's just like Kiyo said."

"Fufufufu. You call her a master even though you're the one who's controlling her like a puppet?"

"Puppet huh" I guess it ends today.

"Fufufu, isn't she though, or would you prefer the term babysitting?"

"Who knows." I replied and tried to change the subject "By the way Arisu, are you perhaps the little girl who fainted in the beach that time?"

"Pffft Hahaha, little girl." Sumi-chan laughed but Arisu has a surprised looked with eyes wide open.

"Well Masumi told me that you have that so called 'borrowed

brown handkerchief."

"So you're really that person who saved me back then." Arisu said  
"But isn't it kinda rude to call me a little girl."

"Well I really taught that the little girl I saved back then was an elementary school student."

"Pffft. 'elementary' HAHAHA. Stop it Kiyo my stomach hurts." As Sumi-chan laughs Arisu lightly hit me with her cane.

"Oww, what was that for?"

"Nothing."

"So? What were you doing back then and why are you alone?"

"You could say that I was just bored and tried to have a little summer adventure alone. But I'm still glad that someone saved me when I collapsed back then. Than you Kiyotaka-kun."

"You're welcome, I guess. But be careful next time."

"Yeah, so how was the sea for you back then?" she asked

"It's beautiful I guess." I can't really describe it and besides it's the first time I saw the sea up close back then.

"I'm glad for you to like it. Fufufu." she said like as if she knows that it was a first for me to see the sea back then. Considering that she knows that I came from that place, I guess it's natural that she knew that I was isolated from the outside world.

'Being her childhood friend wasn't that bad' I thought

We chatted for a little while, and arrived at our destination where Arisu led us.

### ***Beer-chan POV***

"What are we doing here?" I asked

"Like I said we will be going to see Mashima-sensei."

Why would we visit a teacher late at night? And at a bar???

"You didn't say anything about Mashima-sensei."

"We did, you were just preoccupied with Kiyotaka-kun when we called each other with our first names. Right Kiyotaka-kun?"

Ahh now that I think about it, I guess they mentioned Mashima-sensei earlier. Now I'm getting embarrassed because of that blunder.

"Yeah, don't tell me Masumi you want to drink beer here?" He teased, again with a beer joke.

"HEYY!"

"Fufufufu."

"So? What business do we have to Mashima-sen...."

She said earlier that this is a surprise she planned with Kiyo. Meeting with Mashima-sensei with a student from another class....

"...MASAKA!!"

"Fufufufu. I'm really looking forward to your reaction for later. But it seems Masumi-san already guessed it right. "

"I'm already surprised by now! By the way how di-"

As if knowing what will I asked Kiyo interjected me "I will answer your questions later Masumi, I think we need to see Mashima-sensei first it's getting late."

"Yeah."

To think that my friend will be part of our class tomorrow, I'm so happy right now. Hehehe

The three of us had gone to a bar that was made for the adults who worked here in the school. We entered and in a table at the edge of the room, three familiar adults can be seen drinking together.

"Good evening to you our dear teachers" The Loli greeted the three teachers.....

***To be Continued.....***

---

***EXTRA, Beer-chan POV***

Yosha!! My friend will be part of our class tomorrow.



-chan my friend ftw

...

## Chapter 8: The Curious One

### *Nishikawa Ryouko POV*

Earlier in our class, Sakayanagi-san told us that we will cast our censor votes to Katsuragi-kun tomorrow, but I get the feeling that there's something more to it.

I hanged out with some of my friends from other classes to gather some information on who will they cast their praise and censor votes, well it's Sakayanagi-san's orders there's nothing I can do, and my social skills are really helpful in things like this.

In Ichinose-san's class they will probably grant the protection point to Ichinose-san herself and I don't know who will they kicked out maybe they will use points so that no one will be expelled, well they were saving points for something like this.

In Ryuen-kun's class they will grant the protection point to Ishizaki-kun their current leader or Kaneda-kun the smart one, and I heard that they will expel Ryuen-kun. Well considering he's past dictatorship in his class I think they really want him gone.

While in Horikita-san's class, I talked to Mii-chan earlier and she said that they will give the protection point to Hirata-kun and she didn't want to talk about who will they expel.... Something's fishy.

*\*PING*

I grabbed and checked my phone and saw the usual, that Kamuro-san has created a group chat for tomorrow's exam.

*Kamuro Masumi added you, Sakayanagi Arisu and 35 others to the group chat*

*Kamuro Masumi named the group chat to "Class Poll Exam"*

*Sakayanagi: [Good work Masumi-san or should I say Sumi-chan. Fufufufu]*

*Kamuro set Sakayanagi's nickname to elementary-chan*

*Kamuro: [Yeah yeah 'elementary-chan']*

Pffft. What's with that nickname HAHAHA... it's rare for Kamuro-san to reply on our group chats especially just to tease Sakayanagi-san, usually she just creates the group chats that was ordered by

Sakayanagi-san and doesn't really reply back. Did something happened?

*Hashimoto:[Did something happen Kamuro? You rarely reply to our group chats and aside from your unusual teasing what's with that nickname?.]*

*Kamuro: [Shut up, pervert!]*

Ehhh... To think that Kamuro-san will act childish in a chat, it's kinda cute hehehe.

*[Yeah, I agree it's the first time for you to tease Sakayanagi-san in the chat unlike the previous one's that you never reply after creating it.]: Nishikawa*

***Most members of the group chat were also surprised in Kamuro's sudden changed of attitude.***

*elementary-chan: [Fufufufu, she's just really happy I guess, right Masumi-san?]*

*elementary-chan: [Let's just set that aside for now. Good Evening to you my dear classmates. I will now send you the instructions for tomorrow's exam.]*

*elementary-chan: [I won't force you on to who you cast your praise votes. But our desired outcome for censor votes tomorrow will be: 1stTotsuka, 2nd Katsuragi, and third you can vote for anyone with the exception of 'X'. I know I said in the class that we will expel Katsuragi-kun but it's just a bluff, since this will be a warning to him if he still disobey my orders, that's why we will vote for Totsuka-kun his one last follower. Besides if we talk about capability Katsuragi-kun is still better than Totsuka-kun.]*

It seems like I'm right that there's something more to it, Totsuka-kun doesn't bring any benefits to Class A. On the other hand, 'Katsuragi-kun is more useful' I think that was what Sakayanagi-san is getting at. As of the praise votes I think my classmates will vote for Sakayanagi-san. But.... 'X'?

*Kitou: [👍]*

*Yamamura: [👍]*

*Matoba: [👍]*

*Machida: [👍]*

*[👍]:Nishikawa*

*Takemoto: [👍]*

*Hashimoto: [We understand Hime, but what do you mean by 'X']*

.....I'm also wondering what does Sakayanagi-san means by 'X'.

*[Sakayanagi-san. regarding 'X' what is that?] :Nishikawa*

*Random: ['X'??]*

***Other members of the chat has the similar question.***

*elementary-chan: [Fufufu, the mastermind of Horikita Suzune's class.]*

*Hashimoto: [OHHH? HAHAAHAHA, this is interesting the 'X' you're talking about is the one Ryuen's looking for from before, Hime?]*

Ryuen-kun looking for 'X'? what does Hashimoto-kun mean.....  
Ahhh I think I know what it is, If I remember correctly Ryuen-kun was harassing Horikita-san's class before winter vacation. Wait a minute!! I really don't think Ishizaki-kun is really capable of disobeying Ryuen-kun mainly because I think he respects him, the same can be said to Yamada-kun. If Ryuen-kun didn't really get taken down by Ishizaki-kun, then does mean that 'X' was the one who took him down in his position? But I'm not still sure about that.

Huhuhu this is fun. I think I'm solving something really interesting.

*elementary-chan: [Those defects didn't really value their true leader as they exchanged him for some measly points.]*

*[Ehhh? Aren't they just dumb if they do that?] :Nishikawa*

*Nishi: [I'm curious Sakayanagi-san just how much points did they received to sacrifice him? And how did he manage to gain points to transfer in our class, besides we still lacked the necessary points for class transfer.]*

***Other members are also wondering about Nishi's question.***

That's a good question Haruka-chan, if 'X' did manage to supply the points needed for class transfer despite being in Class-C, ***(They still didn't know that Kushida got expelled and the class got demoted back to D.)*** Then, 'X' really seems to be formidable. I really don't mean to be rude but I think they are really dumb to sacrifice someone formidable for just some points.

*elementary-chan: [You'll have your questions answered tomorrow by 'X' personally, but let me just warn you if 'X' gets even a single censor vote aside from Katsuragi-kun and Totsuka-kun I will personally hunt for that/those person, and you'll know what will happen.]*

***HOLY SHIT YOU'RE SCARING US HIME. ~probably snek***

But who could be 'X'? He outsmarted all other leaders in the island exam, if my guess earlier is correct he's also someone strong who defeated Ryuen-kun before winter break, and most of all it seems like Sakayanagi-san really respect 'X' for her to threaten us like this.

Hashimoto: [Hime, you seem to really adore 'X'.]

elementary-chan: [Well of course, since 'X' is a precious childhood friend of mine.]

[Ehhh?] :Nishikawa

Nishi: [🤔]

Hashimoto: [To think that Hime has a childhood friend.]

elementary-chan:[That's kinda rude, don't you think Hashimoto-kun?]

Hashimoto: [Sorry sorry I'm just kind of surprised by what you revealed.]

**All members of the chat were also surprised by Sakayanagi's revelation except for Kamuro. Now no one will surely cast a single censor vote on 'X' since they will be personally face her wrath.**

Hashimoto: [I have a guess on who it is, it seems like 'X' is the reason for Kamuro's sudden change of attitude. Or should I say Sumi-chan...  
HAHAHHAHA]

Hashimoto set Kamuro's nickname to SUMI-CHAN

SUMI-CHAN: [Shut up! pervert snake, and you're not allowed to call me that!!!]

SUMI-CHAN set Hashimoto's nickname to PERVERTSNAKE

OHHH?? I think I also know who it is..... hehehe, I saw them together last Sunday. They're quite cute together, and they seemed to get along really well.

I ship them!!

[If you put it that way Hashimoto-kun, I also think I know who it is based from the previous rumors hehehe.]: Nishikawa

Matoba: [It's really surprising to see Kamuro-san to be like this.]

Satonaka:[Yeah.]

**Some of the chat members has some idea on who 'X' was, since some of them have seen Kamuro last Sunday, she was with a brown haired boy from Class-D.**

Nishi: [No way so it's..... and if Kamuro-san didn't bother to change her nickname here perhaps 'X' is the one who gave it to her.]

Yano: [Yeah and it seems she's really close to 'X'.]

**Kamuro didn't bother to reply mainly because she's too embarrassed right now.**

PERVERTSNAKE: [To think our Tsundere is.....]

elementary-chan:[Fufufufufu. Well if some of you knows who 'X' is just keep it to yourself. I still want to see some surprised faces tomorrow in class. That's all for me, Good night my dear classmates.]

With that done, let's put all together the information I had, and come up with something about 'X'.

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun huh?

He really seems to be the quiet and the mysterious type, in the early days of our school he is in a high rank as one of most handsome guys in our year, but the girls in our class didn't really approached him mainly because of what Kushida-chan said.

Kushida-chan said that 'the gloomy guy is socially awkward and hard to talk with and was a pervert who hangs out with the 3 idiots', but for some reason I didn't really trust Kushida-chan as if she's hiding something, and avoid the topic when we asked about Ayanokouji-kun from before. It's true that I got close to her but not too close to share important information about myself, mainly because I think she's dangerous.

Well I never really talked to Ayanokouji-kun maybe because he's like one those type who's hard to approach? But one time when I hung out to Mii-chan she said that Ayanokouji-kun was the most reliable classmate after Hirata-kun, well of course she liked Hirata-kun, she said that Ayanokouji-kun was a person who was easy to talk with and dependable as he gave some advice to Mii-chan regarding her love to Hirata-kun, which I thought was sweet. To think Ayanokouji-kun has the approval of Mii-chan, second of the most honest girls in our year after Ichinose-san.

Ohh, speaking of Ichinose-san, Amikura-chan said that Ichinose-san always talked about Ayanokouji-kun, maybe she.... KYAHHH. Not only Kamuro-san but also Ichinose-san the most popular girl in our year, and there's also Sakayanagi-san who is a childhood friend.

***(But childhood friends don't win right?)***

That's kinda rude Author-san.

So it seems that one of them is lying, and I think I'm about 90% sure that Kushida-chan is the one who lied....

I have 3 reasons and I think one of them is true:

1st Kushida-chan knows that he is the mastermind and doesn't want to share information to other classes?

2nd Ayanokouji-kun has some dirt on Kushida-chan or the other way around?

3rd they have a secret relationship?

Mii-chan is a honest person, and I can proudly say that I can tell if she was lying. So when we talked about on who will they expel she avoided it even tough they were planning to expel someone she deemed dependable. Mii-chan isn't someone who will be swayed by points, especially if it's someone she respect. So why?



Maybe Kushida-chan has something to do with it? this will be true if my 2nd reason is correct. If you put it that way who will their class believe based on impression the sociable one or the awkward one? Of course they will believe the former. But I'm still not sure.....

I looked at my phone to check the time and it's getting late.

Ughhh I think I need to sleep now, I'm tired of thinking too much, I'll have my questions that I'm curious about answered tomorrow.

Tomorrow will be an interesting day....

There's also the island exam which is a mystery on how they won and.....

*(Hey I thought you will sleep now?)*

Sorry sorry there are a lot of things I'm curious about 'X'.

I'll sleep now...



-chan my friend ftw

...

## Chapter 9: Dumb Fest - Class-D Exam

### *Stalker-chan POV*

It was now the day of voting for the special exam named Class Poll, today one of us will be expelled, Ayanokouji-kun was the target of the class, mainly because of the points that the 33 students received(200K) and will receive(300K) for expelling him.

He said that he will be fine, he won't need my help because he said I'll be targeted, but I think that's a lie.

Even though I didn't stal— follow him for the last few days mainly because he will notice me AGAIN. How the heck does he noticed me every time I stal— follow him. He even had proofs, maybe I will let him teach me how to stal— follow someone without being noticed after this special exam ends.

Well back to the topic, yesterday he was absent, the same as Kushida-san, did they do something??.....

....No no no, no lewd thoughts Chiaki. Ehem, Even Chabashira-sensei was temporarily replaced by Hoshinomiya-sensei yesterday. So I think something happened.

Looking at my classmates they seemed relaxed despite being someone will be expelled today. Except for Hirata-kun, he seemed kinda restless, but not as restless 2 days ago. This leads again to Ayanokouji-kun it seems like he did something to Hirata-kun.....

...No!!! What are those lewd thoughts. Th-they don't swing that way right?

"What's wrong Matsushita-san?" asked Karuizawa-san who was seated behind me

"No, nothing"

I'm spacing out again in the wrong way. Get back to your senses Chiaki!!

Eheem, looking at Ayanokouji-kun's friend group and Horikita-san, it seems like they still didn't know, Ayanokouji-kun said that the seven people who did not receive that message were his group, Horikita-san, Hirata-kun and him.

That's the only information I got from him and I didn't get him to tell me his plan.

As I was lost in my own thoughts, Chabashira-sensei entered the room.

"Go back to your seats now, we will start the exam." Chabashira-

sensei said

What happened to her? She has this aura that is gloomier than before announcing this exam.

The whole class felt it and silence befell in the room.

"....."

To break the silence Horikita-san raised her hand and asked.

"Sensei Kushida-san and Ayanokouji-kun are still not here"

"Don't mind the two of them for now, as they will still vote."

"Did something happened to them?" Horikita-san asked

"I will tell the details later." she answered still in a gloomy tone.

"We will now begin casting your votes. Once your name was called, please make your way to the voting room. Don't be too noisy or cause any ruckus here in the classroom and in the voting room."

It didn't seem like we were going to be voting all at the same time. There was no guarantee that we wouldn't be able to see each other's votes. It seemed that the school was doing what it could to ensure the votes remained anonymous. We were called five at a time, when the first five came back confusion can be seen to their face.

As my name was called together with the other four we proceeded to the voting room, sitting on the chair, searching through the names of our class I can't find his name and Kushida-san in the list..... still worried but I proceeded to cast my votes in my class. I also noticed that our class was labeled Class-D, which worried me more because something did happened that sensei didn't talked about.

As I proceed to cast my vote, which is the dedicated praise vote in another class.....

.....Why does Ayanokouji-kun's name was on Class-A's list?

### ***Ichinose POV***

Earlier I asked Ay- Kiyotaka-kun if he will be ok in the exam, which he replied with his usual vagueness, I'm still a bit worried but since it's him I guess he will be alright.

I decided to cast my additional praise vote to him to help him even if it's a little tiny bit, while my other 39 classmates will vote Ryuen-kun. I clicked on the tab of Class-C but Ryuen-kun's class list appeared....

I then clicked to Class D and saw Horikita-san's class list.... they got demoted? did something happened? But....

His name wasn't there, I got a little nervous did something happened to him? No no no, I was able to talked to him earlier and he said that he will be fine. I then clicked the tab for Class-A, his name..... was there.

### ***Ryuuen POV***

I'm still surprised that the monster teamed up with that Loli.

"Kukuku. Shiina did you notice?"

"Hmmm?"

"About your book buddy, I mean."

"Ahhh, Yeah. I'm still surprised that Ayanokouji-kun is now on another class, but I think it would make me happier if he joined our class instead."

"Kukuku, it seems like those defects did something to that monster to make him transfer and side with the Loli."

"What are you talking about Ryuuen-kun?" she asked as she tilted her head "And why are you calling my book buddy a monster?"

"No, nevermind."

I also noticed that Kikyou's name wasn't in their class list and also their class is labeled Class-D again, there's only one reason to it, she was expelled by the monster. So the thing that he had me do with Kikyou is related to that and she was easily caught to it. But what dirt Kikyou had to him for her to be the one expelled.....

No use in thinking too much about this since this will be my last day here in this school, to think that the monster and loli teamed up when I'm gone and I will never have a chance to play with the both of them, what a wasted opportunity.

### ***Ishizaki and Ibuki thoughts***

'I think everyone in this class will be surprised that Ryuuen-san will not be expelled. Earlier I planned to cast my praise vote to Ayanokouji-san to repay him because he helped us but I didn't see his name in his class, did something bad happened to him? Why was their class back to D? No no no, there's no way that the one who had beaten Ryuuen-san will be in trouble right? Let's just think positively since he's an amazing person maybe he found a loophole in the exam.....??' Ishizaki pondered, he's one of the people who didn't bother to check the name of Ayanokouji in other classes...

'So that guy transferred to Sakayanagi's class, there's no way that guy will just transfer to other classes just because he wanted and besides he's still babysitting that Horikita. So something happened, he helped us with both Ichinose and Ryuuen, but he didn't even tried to ask us for help even though..... Ughhhh No use overthinking about that. Atleast he's not expelled right?...' Another Tsund—, Ibuki thought.

### ***3rd-Person POV Horikita's Class***

Silence befell the room even Horikita is still processing what she

just saw, Ayanokouji's name was listed in Class-A, and their class was demoted back to Class-D. Only a few of them noticed that Ayanokouji's name is in Class-A. They didn't bother to check the list because they already had a person in mind that they will cast their additional praise vote in other classes.

'He promised me to help me reach Class-A. Why why why.....' Horikita thought

Others thought that Ayanokouji's name was not in their class list and thought he's already expelled, these were the ones who didn't bother to check the name of Ayanokouji in other classes, just like Ishizaki. Well they thought that someone will never have 20M points to save someone or transfer classes. They also asked themselves if they will still receive the 300,000 private points due to his expulsion, mainly Yamauchi.

Professor or also known as Sotomura who saw that Ayanokouji's name is in Class-A thought that it is a system bug.

Ike and the sims who planned to cast their praise votes to Kushida, were still shocked that her name was not there.

'Looks like he's fine.' Satou and Mii-chan thought as they sighed internally, they are one of those people who didn't want Ayanokouji expelled, mainly because one cared for him and the other one respected him. But at the same time they also didn't want to be targeted next. So in the end they planned to not cast their censor vote on him. Not seeing his name on their Class list earlier worried them. But when they voted for their additional praise vote they saw that his name was on Class A, they were relieved and surprised.

To break the silence even though Chabashira-sensei warned them not to be noisy Koenji clapped his hands and said "HA HA HA, Sasuga Ayanokouji-boy. To changed classes just before you monkeys can cast your censor votes on him. HAHAAHA, you didn't expel him so you monkeys will not get those 300,000 points."

"Huh?!!" exclaimed Yamauchi, who is one of the person who didn't bother to check Ayanokouji's name in other classes.

"You! Yamauchi-kun did you have something to do with his class transfer?" Horikita asked him with a glare, still feeling betrayed by Ayanokouji, but at the same time she's willing to find the truth on 'Why did he do it?'.

"Class transfer?" Yamauchi asked still not realizing what they meant, mainly because he thought that Ayanokouji was already expelled. And besides there's no way Ayanokouji will have 20 million points.... or so he thought.

'Just how dumb is this monkey' Koenji thought.

"As expected of a dumb defective who's observational skills are lesser than of a chimpanzee."

"Don't tell me you told him about the message?!!" said Shinohara, who also didn't checked Ayanokouji's name.

'Now it's a female dumb monkey'

"No. No. female monkey-san, and even if I, the perfect existence did tell him, do you think I did something to help the Ayanokouji-boy transfer to Class-A?"

"Message?" asked Horikita

"What do you mean by that 'message' Shinohara-san?" asked Hirata

"No, nothing..."

"It looks like Hirata-boy and Horikita-girl are two of those seven who didn't receive that message and these monkeys are still scared of that lousy threat that they will be targeted."

Koenji showed the message to them, as both Horikita and Hirata made some shocked and betrayed expressions after reading it.

"Why didn't you tell us about this message?!" asked Horikita in a cold and angry voice "You were easily brib—"

But before she could finish her statement Chabashira-sensei entered the room and interject her.

"Sit down for now Horikita and Hirata you may continue that later, I will now announce the results of the exam. But before that as you saw earlier in the voting list Ayanokouji Kiyotaka has transferred to Class-A"

""""WHAT!"""" the idiots of the class shouted.

'Are my classmates/students really this dumb.' Horikita/Ayanokouji Group/Karuizawa/Matsushita/Satou/Chabashira-sensei and a few more others thought as they sighed internally.

Even Hirata and Mii-chan who never really wanted to insult a classmate were really dumbfounded on how ignorant and negligent most of their classmates were.

"Did that gloomy guy betray the class!?" said Miyamoto and Shinohara in unison.

"HA HA HA, gloomy guy this gloomy guy that, betray this betray that. You really are dumb aren't you male Monkey-kun and female Monkey-san? Aren't you the one's who betrayed him first?" said Koenji with his usual smirk.

'So they really did betray him huh.....' Chabashira-sensei thought while thinking about the event last night.

"Tha—..."

"Seeing your reactions on Sensei-chan's announcement, it looks like these idiot monkeys really didn't check the voting list earlier and just remained ignorant with our discussion. You have it hard sensei."

"I think I agree with you with that Koenji, but back to the topic

let me finish first." replied Chabashira-sensei still in a gloomy tone "While Ayanokouji switched classes Kushida was expelled."

"Huh?!! Wait sensei ho—" before Ike could finish his question, Chabashira-sensei interjected.

"She was expelled due to false accusation of rape, the one she accused was Ayanokouji, but he had evidence that he was falsely accused. And Kushida was sent to Tokyo's juvenile house for 6 months. You were also demoted back to Class-D due to Kushida's expulsion."

"Wait Kushida-chan will not do that, maybe that guy really did it to her." said Ike with disbelief.

"Yeah Kushida-chan was abused by him." said Miyamoto as he agreed with Ike.

"Do you have proof that he did it? And besides you can ask for the evidence he had in the student council since they have a copy of the submitted evidence of Ayanokouji, I was also there in the trial and truly believed that Ayanokouji was falsely accused due to the sudden change of Kushida's nature when she was cornered."

"Wh-what are you talk—"

"I can answer that one later Ike-kun, since I know what sensei is talking about, can we move on now to the results sensei?" said Horikita as she was able to recover some of her composure.

But still she felt betrayed by her classmates, by doing something stupid, even Sudou who was supposed to be a trusted companion but he didn't told her about that message.

"Yeah, moving on to the results."

She pasted the results of the voting in the board

**Students with the most Praise Votes:**

**1. Hirata Yosuke — 33 --> GRANTED 1-PP**

2. Karuizawa Kei — 21

3. Wang Mei-Yu — 20

**Students with the most Censor Votes:**

**1. Yamauchi Haruki — 31 --> EXPELLED**

2. Ike Kanji — 25

3. Sudou Ken — 19

"With this, I will now formally end the exam. Yamauchi will be expelled and as for Hirata he will be granted the protection point. Come to the faculty with me now, Yamauchi."

"Why, why, why! Why me!! This is such a stupid exam! A complete joke!"

"While you're free to think whatever you want, the decision has already been made, Yamauchi."

"SHUT UP!!!" Yamauchi howled, unable to accept the reality of

his situation. "That's right. Arisu-chan, go ask Arisu-chan! She said she'd have Class A use their praise votes on me to protect me and we will have a date later! She didn't keep her promise! Is she just gonna be allowed to get away with that!?"

"Do you have something that clearly proves that she made such a promise?"

"She promised! At the karaoke! I heard her!!!"

"While I want to believe you, words alone aren't enough to prove anything."

"Oh my god, why is this happening!?"

"It's time to leave the classroom, Yamauchi."

"Get out of here quickly you monkey. Your existence here has already been deleted."

"I haven't accepted it yet!"

"So you plan to be irredeemably defective, pitiable, and ugly until the very end?"

After Koenji's persistent provocations, Yamauchi finally snapped.

"Grahhhh!!"

He picked up the chair to his desk and charged at Koenji. He then lifted the chair up into the air and swung it down, aiming at Koenji's head. If the attack had hit him directly, the resulting injury would've been inexcusable, however, Koenji wasn't naive enough to be hit by such a sloppy attack. Koenji casually grabbed the leg of the chair as it swung down at him and forcibly pulled the chair out of Yamauchi's hands.

"You intended to kill me. You won't have any complaints if I return the favor, yes?"

Yamauchi's face stiffened immediately.

"That's enough." Chabashira-sensei intervened

Following her instructions, Koenji promptly let go of the chair.

"Don't do any more than this, Yamauchi. For your own sake."

From around the room, Yamauchi noticed the heartbreaking gazes of his classmates, their gazes filled with pity.

And within him, something broke.

"U-uwaaaahhhh!" Crumbling on the spot, he raised his voice and began to bawl.

"Come to the faculty with me now." Hearing Chabashira-sensei words again, Yamauchi lost his will to resist.

### ***Hirata POV***

I wish there was something else we as a class had done to save Yamauchi-kun and Kushida-san, and more importantly to stop Ayanokouji-kun from transferring to Class-A. If Ayanokouji-kun hadn't talked to me that day, I think I will crumble apart upon



learning that three of our classmates have left.

If I allowed myself to reminisce with this too much my mind wouldn't be able to focus on what will happen in the future. I hadn't done enough especially with Ayanokouji-kun who always work behind the scenes for our class and yet the class betrayed him.

"So care to explain yourselves??" Horikita-san asked the whole class as she stand behind the podium. "As I asked earlier why didn't you tell me or Hirata-kun about that message, and why did you get easily bribed by that unknown sender?"

Even if it's a total of 500K points per student after they successfully expelled Ayanokouji-kun, does the question 'Why him?' didn't occur to them? maybe to the others it did occur to them but got scared of the threat? or just the greed to receive 500K points by sacrificing a classmate was enough to do it?

Well I'm not being rude to my other classmates but considering the things that happened earlier on how negligent and dumb they can be, I guess I'm not that surprised.

Before someone could answer her question, the door opened and...


"Kukuku, it seems like the monster really transferred to the class of that Loli."

Ryuuen-kun entered the room with Ishizaki-kun and Yamada-kun. Monster? does he mean Ayanokouji-kun?

I think this will become troublesome....

*To be Continued.....*

---

-chan my friend ftw

...

**'PERHAPS I WAS TOO HARSH ON THEM'**

**I THINK I MADE THEM TOO D&D = DUMB AND DEFECTIVE.**

## Chapter 10: Kurasu-A e Yōkoso, Kiyo -- (Welcome to Class-A, Kiyo)

### *Kiyo POV*

Saturday morning, the very day of the exam, had finally arrived. Every single class had managed to come to a decision.

My new class had chosen to expel Totsuka as planned by Arisu. Making Totsuka believe that Katsuragi will be the one who the class will expel, this will also make Katsuragi lose his position as a leader since his one last follower will be gone.

Originally, Totsuka wasn't the only one who sided with Katsuragi. Even though Arisu intended to mercilessly make an example out of Katsuragi for going against her, Totsuka's expulsion would have an even larger impact on Class A. It would instill the idea that, if you sided with Katsuragi, you would be the next to see yourself in Totsuka's shoes.

The same thing goes with Yamauchi making him believe that he will receive the praise votes of Class-A.

'What a sadistic little girl' I thought.

I was on my way to school and was about to exit the dorms, Honami approached me, and behind her were her friends.

"Yahoo!! Ay-Kiyotaka-kun, Good Morning."

I nodded and replied "Good Morning Honami."

"Eh to think you're this close, being in first name basis." Amikura said teasingly to Honami.

### *Ichinose POV*

"Ne ne ne, Honami-chan isn't that your crush?" Mako-chan asked as she pointed to Kiyotaka-kun who was exiting the dorms with his usual calm and composed demeanor.

"W-what are you saying Mako-chan?"

"Ehh you always mention him with our girls talk and you blushing right now won't deny that fact." she said and as she thought of something interesting "And besides you didn't even really denied that she's your crush, right Chihiro-chan?" she added

No way, am I really?? And it's true that I really didn't deny it, maybe just a little crush? or maybe more? I don't really know. Everytime I see him or talked to him ever since that day, I felt

really happy as my heart beats fast.

"Yeah to think that Honami-chan has a crush on Love Adviser-san."

"Love Adviser-san? What are you talking about Chihiro-chan?"  
Asked Mako-chan

"It's a secret, Ne Honami-chan?"

Ahh she's talking about that time I asked Kiyotaka-kun to be my fake boyfriend, how nostalgic.

"Ehhh, anyways aren't you going to greet him?"

"Yeah." I replied then waved my hand to greet him "Yahoo!! Ay-Kiyotaka-kun, Good Morning."

"Good Morning Honami."

"Eh to think you're this close, being in first name basis." Mako-chan said as she looked at me with a teasing smile. "Aren't you going to introduce us?"

"Ahh yeah, Ehemmm. Kiyotaka-kun these are Amikura Mako-chan and Shiranami Chihiro-chan." I said to Kiyotaka-kun then faced the two of them "This is Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun a dear friend of mine."

"Yeah, Good Morning and nice to meet you, Amikura and Shiranami." said Kiyotaka-kun

"Dear friend of Honami-chan nice to meet you." said Mako-chan, you're making me embarrassed with your teasing!

"Good Morning Love Adviser-san"

"Love Adviser?" Kiyotaka asked.

"You know from before hehehe."

"Ahhh, it's been some time after that huh?"

"Yeah it is, and to think that we will be second years next month. How nostalgic." I said

"Ehhh what are the three of you talking about?"

"Secret~" Said Chihiro-chan

"Ehhh no fair. Ahhh..." she paused as she had a wide grin on her face. "...me and Chihiro-chan will go on ahead, Ne Chihiro-chan?"

"Ehh?" then Mako-chan whispered something to Chihiro-chan and she agreed "I see, we will go on ahead Honami-chan. Goodluck."

"What do y-" she interjected me

"Tell us later, about your lovey dovey talk~" she whispered

"Mako-chan!!"

"Bye bye Ayanokouji-kun and Honami-chan." said Mako-chan as she and Chihiro-chan waved their hands and went ahead.

"Sorry about that Kiyotaka-kun, I hope we didn't trouble you. hehe."

"It's ok, you have such lively classmates."

"Hehehe that's true, by the way will you be alright in the exam?"

"I wonder." now that's worrisome

"I think I will cast that additional praise vote to you, just like I said before."

"You made a deal with Ishizaki and Ibuki right? You don't need to cast your vote on me."

"It will be alright it will be just my vote, just let me be selfish and help you this time. And besides to cancel on what Ryuuen-kun will have my other 39 classmates will cast their votes on him."

In the end if we cancel on what he will have on his class and on my class he will end up with atleast 3-4 praise votes in the end. Those 3-4 votes includes Ibuki-san, Ishizaki-kun, Shiina-san and there's also Yamada-kun.

"I think you can say that it's just a little thanks for what have you done to help us." I added

"Like I said before I didn't do much, it's just that you and their—" I interjected him knowing what he will say. Well this is just the usual him the always humble one.

"Eheem, just like I said earlier just let me be selfish this time, alright?"

"Well if you put it like that, thank you Honami."

"You're welcome Kiyotaka-kun."

We talked about some silly things on our way to school, but we parted ways at the front gate as he said that he will meet someone. I felt great today because no one of my classma— or should I say that no one of my friends in our class will have to say goodbye.

I'm sincerely thankful to Kiyotaka-kun for that. He said that he just proposed the idea but to me, Ibuki-san, and Ishizaki-kun it's more than that. Because without his connections to the three of us we will not be able to get what we wanted today in this exam. He really sure is humble and that's one of the things I liked about him.

### ***Totsuka POV --- > Totsu-gone later***

Today was the day someone in our class will be expelled, more specifically Katsuragi-san will be expelled it was announced by Sakayanagi yesterday. Now I will be a lackey of that Sakayanagi which I don't really liked, but I had no choice if I disobey her I will be the next to follow Katsuragi-san. I really liked Katsuragi-san's ideals which is why I followed him until the very end, it's true that Sakayanagi is smart but me and Katsuragi-san hate the way she do things.

As I entered the room I noticed that there is a new seat in the back of my protagonist seat.... Ehh did someone transfer to our class? As I put my bag in my table, I approached Katsuragi-san who was seated in the first row beside the window.

"Good Morning Katsuragi-san."

"Yeah, Good Morning Yahiko."

"By the way Katsuragi-san the seat behind my seat..." I said while pointing to the new chair and table.

"Yeah, I think someone transferred but I don't know who or from which class will he/she come from. I also asked our classmates but they said they didn't know who will it be."

"Do you think Sakayanagi has something to do with it?"

"Maybe, but I think it is unreasonable for someone to transfer classes during a special exam, especially in an exam like this so I think the one who will transfer is someone his/her class was trying to get him/her expelled."

"Ohh I see that makes sense, as expected of Katsuragi-san." I didn't think about it so the one who will transfer is someone their class want to be expelled?

"I think it's Ryuen based on what I heard about his class, they want him expelled because of his past dictatorial leadership."

"As expec—" Before I finish my catchphrase, the snake interrupted me.

"That's an amazing deduction Katsuragi, but I think it won't be him." said Hashimoto with his usual grin.

"Hashimoto... Do you know who will it be?" asked Katsuragi-san

"I wonder. Besides you will be expelled, so why bother?"

When he said that selfish thing I snapped "You bastard!!"

"Stop it Yahiko, besides he's right. So don't get yourself in trouble or you'll be Sakayanagi's next target."

"It looks like Katsuragi understands the situation, you should be thankful to him for reminding you, Totsuka." the snake said with a smirk as he left.

That bastard always disrespecting Katsuragi-san. As I chatted to Katsuragi-san with some more time I noticed that he's a little bit sad. I guess it's normal knowing that he will be expelled.

As I go back and sat down to my protagonist seat and thinking on who will be the other protagonist who will sit behind me, my seatmate Kamuro arrived. What the hell happened?

This is not normal, usually she has her grumpy look 🙄 on her face but today she seems different ☐. I never really tried to chat with her because she's scary when she had that grumpy look, the look that can kill you. Should I greet her? I think should talk to her because it seems like she's in a good mood and not scary now. But as I pondered the snake greeted her.

"Good Morning Kamuro or should I say..." he whispered the next part and Kamuro is back to the usual Kamuro, the grumpy one. What the hell did he said to destroy her mood like that?

"Shut up pervert! I told you don't call me that." She said as she glared intently at the snake.

Clack clack clack

"Fufufu, you seem to be having fun Hashimoto-kun and..." she paused for a while Kamuro is glaring at her "...Masumi-san. Fufufu did you think I will call you by that other name?"

What are they talking about? Well never mind since I never really got along with this group. I'll just play with my phone while waiting for Mashima-sensei. And I'm still pretty annoyed with this snake on his remark against Katsuragi-san earlier.

"Good Morning Hime, it looks like I ruined Kamuro's great mood earlier. Sorry about that, Kamuro."

"Good Morning Hashimoto-kun and..." she paused again "...Masumi-san."

"Tsk. Stop pausing for no reason. You're irritating me!"

I can see my other classmates laugh hearing their conversation. As for me I really don't get what are they talking about, I'm feeling left out. Is it because am I still on Katsuragi-san's side? This is the last day Yahiko just bear with it, I will stick with Katsuragi-san until the very end. But it really makes me sad that it will end today and starting tomorrow I will need to blend and get along with my classmates.

"Hime, about the transferee..." he paused then whispered to Sakayanagi.

"Fufufu, I wonder about that." she replied with her usual smug smile. "And besides it's not a surprise anymore if you knew who it is right?"

"Well I guess you're right."

So she really knows or she has something to do with the new transferee student. Well I'm not gonna pry to it, I'll just stay quiet while playing with my phone and will just listen to their conversation.

"Good Morning Hashimoto-kun, Sakayanagi-san and..." she paused for a while just like Sakayanagi "...Kamuro-san."

"Not you too Nishikawa!" said Kamuro and then she glared at Sakayanagi "Did you plan this to tease me early in the morning?"

Before Sakayanagi can answer, Nishikawa apologized first. "Sorry about that Kamuro-san I didn't really didn't mean it, I'm just reluctant if I should call you that and besides...." she whispered something "...right?"

After she whispered something her face reddened, is she perhaps embarrassed by what Nishikawa said?. I saw my other classmates surprised by her reaction, since it's really rare for Kamuro.

"W-what are you talking about?!"

"Fufufufu, to see Masumi-san like this." she then snap a picture of Kamuro and asked Nishikawa "What did you tell her Nishikawa-san?"

"Hey! why did you took a photo of me? Delete that!!" Kamuro exclaimed.

"Hehehe, I think she will be really angry at me if I tell you Sakayanagi-san, so I won't."

"Fufufu, is that so?"

"Hey! delete that photo that you took."

"To think our tsundere will act like this..."

I glanced away from my phone and saw some of my classmates laughing with their interaction while Kitou just nods in agreement. Me? well I really didn't care since I'm not really close to them. But I'm still surprised with Kamuro's sudden change of attitude.

I saw Katsuragi-san seemingly reluctant on wanting to asked who the new transferee is, but decided to not asked anymore because he already knew the outcome of the exam.

And with that the door opened and we saw Mashima-sensei walk through beside the podium.

"Good morning, as you can see in the back that we have a new seat prepared as there will be a new student joining us. Please enter."

As the door opened both me and Katsuragi-san stood up from our seats with surprised looks, some of my classmates were fairly surprised, while some were not maybe they guessed it already. But a question pop into my head 'Why him? and how?'.

"Ayanokouji..."

"My guess was right." muttered snake with a smirk and Nishikawa with a cheerful smile.

### ***Sumi-chan POV***

Not you too Author-san!!!!...

Ehheh, I felt tired with that unusual teasing early in the morning. That damn Loli, snek and even Nishikawa too. And the thing she said made me really flustered earlier. Anyway now that Mashima-sensei is here I need to get my composure back. Why you asked? it's because my friend will join our class which I'm really happy about it.

"Good morning, as you can see in the back that we have a new seat prepared as there will be a new student joining us. Please enter."

"Ayanokouji..."

Katsuragi and Totsuka stood up with surprised looks on their faces. I think they really never expected that the one who will

transfer to our class was Kiyo. Well if I hadn't known him for a while I will be surprised too since from the start of our school year he never really stood out, or basically he never wanted to gain attention, which is typical of him.

"Totsuka and Katsuragi can you sit down for a moment?" Mashima-sensei asked as the two of them complied and sat down "Ayanokouji, care to introduce yourself?"

I hope he won't fail his introduction this time just like his introduction from his former class, I laughed that time when he mentioned it. I think I won't be able to control my laugh here if he will fail again this time Pfft.

"I'm Ayanokouji Kiyotaka from Class-C"

***(they still didn't know that his former class got demoted to D due to Kushida's expulsion.)***

"I'm quite good at academics and quite athletic. I like spending my free time reading books in the library, I also play chess, and right now I'm trying to learn and improve my painting skills through the help of Masumi which I'm really thankful of." with the mention of my name my classmates turned their heads to face me "I will also do my best to help the class maintain its position and with that I hope we can get along with each other."

Hey!! Why did you have to mention me!! I'm getting more embarrassed with the suspicious grin and looks my classmates have.

And in the first place why do I feel embarrassed and flustered every now and then?!!

"You can ask your questions later to him, as it is already time for your Special Exam, Ayanokouji you can take your seat now."

He nodded and proceeded to his seat, and as he approached his seat.

"Good morning, Masumi." he greeted me with his usual calm and monotone voice.

"Yeah good morning." I greeted him back " And welcome to Class-A, Kiyo."

### **Seating arrangement at the back corner beside the window:**

*Sakayanagi used points to exchanged seats with the former owner who sat beside Kamuro.*

[Hashimoto] — [Nishikawa] — [Kitou]

[Totsuka] — [Kamuro] — [Sakayanagi]

[New seat]

Seeing their cute little interaction Nishikawa gave Kamuro a thumbs up 👍, like saying 'I ship you two.'



The same goes for Author-san. 👍

***To be Continued.....***

---

I made Nishikawa as a test Character as seen from Chapter 8. Well there's not enough info on her and the other girls on Class-A and besides I really liked the fics where she was involved. In this fic she will be just like Chitanda from Hyouka, an always curious girl. The only thing I know about her from LN is that she was part of the Dragon Group in the Zodiac Exam, so it means that she is a smart student? And it seems like she's also popular? based from v9.

🍷-chan my friend ftw

...

# Chapter 11: Desire of a Childhood Friend

## *Arisu POV*

A life of confinement within that facility, only to have their existence added to some database somewhere.

I could still recall the scene across the glass screen on that day as if it had occurred only yesterday. A screen that seemed to be some sort of one-way mirror so they couldn't see us from the other side. There I saw a pure white space and the young Kiyotaka-kun, who was dominating his opponents in chess.

He dominated them with ease, even then he had that emotionless nature that he even had until now.

He is like a robot devoid of human emotions, who was just accomplishing every task he had been given.

I wondered back then, lots of questions in my mind that even now most of them, I don't know the answer.

Did he had someone he cared about in that place or even before he was sent to that place, was it his mother? Who I knew nothing about. Is his mother alive? Did she agree to send Kiyotaka-kun in that place?

Was there a child back there the same age as ours that he cared for? Or did the other kids just struggled until they are disposed of?

Did he had emotions before he was sent to that facility? Did something happened before then that made his father put his own son in that facility? Or did he just forced him?

What if from the very moment he was born, he had lived within that place? Did the first thing he saw wasn't his mother nor his father, but the plain white ceiling of that facility? If so, he hadn't ever received any love from his parents. How lonely and desolate such a life must be.

I pitied him ever since that day. No, every child who did and will go to that place, I pity them. Talents aside, there was still a lot to gain and learn through physical contact with other people which that place never taught.

It's not easy even for him to escape that place, which makes me wonder if someone helped him, if there is, that someone must also pitied Kiyotaka-kun. I hope that the one who helped him escape that place is fine. But knowing that man from my father's stories.....

I don't want to think about it.

The very day that I went to that place I told my father that I want to destroy it. The creation of a false genius aside, what really drives me most was I didn't like the idea to force many other children to suffer the same fate as Kiyotaka-kun and the children will similarly not receive or know of a parent's affection and other such emotions.

The day when he said that he would help me smash that place, I still wonder what made him make that decision...

Was it freedom? Just like a bird who flew away from his cage, he doesn't want to come back there anymore, wanting to be free from that cruel and isolated place. Will he get caught back and be put back in that place? I don't know, but I won't let it happen as I made a deal with him to protect that freedom.

Or was it curiosity of the outside world? Even now he is still curious and three years on this school isn't enough to fulfill that curiosity. It is a curiosity that he didn't learned in that place, is it curiosity about other people? Food that he never had eaten? Or was it about places he had never gone to?

My father has known that Kiyotaka-kun desired a peaceful life that he never experienced in that place.

I don't know if my father made a blunder or not, if he admitted him here in this school why did he not put him in Class-B or in Class-A if he really wanted to give him that peaceful life?

Did he want to test the masterpiece of that place on how far can the masterpiece go from the bottom? Or was there something else?....

....A match with Kiyotaka-kun to settle who between us is more superior, a false genius or a natural born one? I think that can wait until we finally destroyed that place.

.....

.....

...

"And welcome to Class-A, Kiyo." said Masumi-san with a bright smile.

It was a bright genuine smile that she never showed to me when she's with me or I think everyone in this class. I think everyone who saw this little interaction has thought that 'Is this really Kamuro?'. Fufufu, even I was a little surprised.

"Welcome to our class Kiyotaka-kun." I said with a smile, to be honest I don't know if it can compare to Masumi-san. Well I don't really care, what matters most is that he's here which I'm most happy about.

"Thank you, Masumi and Arisu." Kiyotaka-kun said with a light little smile as he proceeded to his seat. This is the first time that I

saw his blank expression change, it was so momentary that it only occurred for about 1.35 seconds or even less.

I preserved that moment within my memory to recall it later. I was really thankful for this memory of mine for times like this. Fufufufu.

I'm not really sure if some of my other classmates saw that in their point of view. I think the ones who saw that light smile were only me, Masumi-san and Yamamura-san who sat beside me. I'm sure even Masumi-san was surprised with that surprise attack.

I think Kiyotaka-kun has no idea that he just smiled himself, is it because of what he had been through within that place? That just a simple smile is so hard for him to do? But for him to show even a tiny bit of emotion right now, I think he's making progress even if it's a little tiny bit.

"That was surprising right, Masumi-san?"

"...." she still processed what she saw.

'How cute' I thought.

"Ehhem. We will now begin your exam. You will be called five at a time, once your name was called together with the other four, please make your way to the voting room. Don't be too noisy or cause any ruckus here in the classroom and in the voting room. Are there any questions?"

I raised my hand "Sensei since there are 41 of us now and it seems like Kiyotaka-kun will be called last since he just joined our class and he will go there alone, can I join him together with Masumi-san? We don't want to leave a bad impression on him as he just joined our class and will vote alone, I think he will feel lonely."

"Hmmm. Okay, I'll inform the instructor there that the three of you will be voting last."

"Thank you sensei."

Only Totsuka-kun and Katsuragi-kun were quite doubtful of my suggestion. And the others who knew our relationship, may had considered it as a childhood friend who was who worried about him.

After that sensei left with the first five who will vote to the voting room. We waited until our names were called, as our names were called the three of us proceeded to the voting room as we chat in a light voice. The voting room for our class was in the upper floor.

"Thanks for that, Arisu."

"No no, I just don't want our new transferee to feel lonely voting alone. Right Masumi-san?"

"Yeah. Hey Kiyu."

"Hmm?"

"Earlier why did you mention my name, it's embarrassing you

know."

"I felt that you will just laugh at me later if I fail my introduction."

"Guuhh."

"Looks like I'm right."

"Fufufu. To think that you of all people will worry about something as a introduction."

"Well I fail my introduction from my class before."

To think that the masterpiece of that place was defeated by an introduction. Pfft.

"Say Kiyotaka-kun earlier did you just smile?"

"Did I?" Looks like my assumption earlier was right.

"I think you did, right Masumi-san? I myself was surprised that for the first time I saw you smile."

"Yeah, it's the first time that I saw you made a change on your blank face."

"I think it's a good thing right Kiyotaka-kun?"

"Yeah, I guess you're right." For him to change little by little and accepting the change that the other people gave him.

"And besides Masumi-san was blushing for a while after you smiled."

"I didn't!.. I'm just surprised... that's all."

"Fufufu." what a cute lie.

"Wait even as a kid you didn't saw him smile?" asked Masumi-san

"Well I got homeschooled as a child and she just visited me from time to time. And just like I said before I'm bad at expressing myself since I was born." Kiyotaka-kun said, so were going with that story. It's just a one sided relationship anyway.

"Yeah, he was really a kid who didn't smile even back then."

"I feel like the two of you are lying." she's really keen "But I won't pry to it since you don't want to talk about it."

I think Kiyotaka-kun already noticed that Masumi-san is really keen and observant in things like these. And she doesn't want to ruin their friendship by prying too much. **(UNLIKE SOMEONE FROM HIS FORMER CLASS.)**

"Thank you, Masumi."

"Yeah, thanks Masumi-san for understanding."

"Well I guess I'll listen if you wanna talk about it since I'm your friend and you can rely on me."

And she's also considerate, well not on me but on Kiyotaka-kun. She also understands him very well. She really became a good friend to him, even though they only knew each other for a short time. I'm quite jealous.

And what about me?

Did I consider Masumi-san a friend like I call her or just a pawn that I can use? It's both of them, a part of me considered her as a friend, I blackmailed her to force her to become a friend of mine and work for me. What a silly girl am I fufufu.

Is it really a blackmail though? Or did I just do that to stop her habitual shoplifting for some time? Even I myself don't know.

If somehow or someway she was caught by a perverted guy, will she be demanded with perverted things? As a girl the thought of it makes me sick.

What about her did she consider me a friend? I think not. It makes me kinda sad. Huhu

What I'm curious is how does Kiyotaka-kun will see her in the near future, a tool? a friend? or maybe more than that?

Am I jealous and did it make me sad? Of course I am, I'm not really expecting that they will really get along this well. But for him to show emotion that he lost or he never had I think he's making progress even if it's bit by bit. That alone can be considered as a first step on overthrowing the White Room.

No, more likely it's to overthrow his father's ideologies. I think Kiyotaka-kun of all people knew that very well.

He made some he may consider friends from his former class and even now I think he will make some more in my class, he has connections to all leaders in our year and the former SCP.

Did he really change? I don't know, time will tell on what these things, those bits will form into, that's why we or someone who understands him must be there for him to see the the outcome of his desired change.

We arrived in the voting room as we sat on the seats provided we started voting.

Fufufu. The name of Kiyotaka-kun was on the bottom of the list of our class well it's expected since he payed 30,000 private points and asked Mashima-sensei to put his name at the last position of our voting list.

Considering the hasty attitude of most of his old classmates I guess they won't check his name at the bottom of the list. And I think Yamauchi-kun was currently celebrating his success, well he's too easy to manipulate.

Too bad for him I guess, he's one of those people who insults Kiyotaka-kun in their class. So who's my next target in their class? Hmmmm... Shinohara, Ike, Hondou or Miyamoto? Fufufufu I need to settle my next target...

It looks like I acting like an overprotective Mom. (*"Looks like Kiyopon found a new Mom in his new class. I'm just a little sad."* – HaruMom )

After the three of us voted we proceeded back to our classroom, since the voting is automated it will be easier to tally. I think we only need to wait around 15 minutes for us to get the results.

*To be Continued.....*

---

**EXTRA!! Sumi-chan POV**

**That damn Loli saying whatever she wants.**

**And I didn't blush!!!**

**(Damn Tsun- Oww what was that for?!)**

**You're also teasing too much Author-san**

-chan ftw

...

## Chapter 12: Interrogation gone wrong

*Nishikawa Ryouko --> ??? POV*

We were currently waiting for the results of the Class Poll, well we already know who will be expelled. I'm sure most of my classmates even when Sakayanagi-san said to vote whoever we want in our praise votes almost everyone will vote for her since she's our leader.

I think what really surprised the most of us was the urgent message we had from Sakayanagi-san earlier before class, on who to cast our additional praise vote that is dedicated to other classes....

"So Sakayanagi care to explain how and why did Ayanokouji transferred to our class?" Asked Katsuragi-kun

"Hmmm, I guess it's fine for you to know since you will leave the school this day." Sakayanagi-san replied "Can you please explain the details Kiyotaka-kun."

Everyone in class looked at Ayanokouji-kun waiting for an explanation, except for Totsuka-kun who was seated in front of him, he has a grim expression due to Sakayanagi-san's remark.

Ayanokouji-kun stood up and sighed slightly before he spoke. "Well there's someone who wanted me expelled and bribe my class to cast their censor votes on me. My classmates, 33 of them were messaged that they will received a total of 500,000 private points if they manage to expel me."

"Why would someone use a lot of priva—" before Katsuragi-kun manage asked his question Sakayanagi-san interjected him.

"It's because the one who want him expelled knows that Kiyotaka-kun is a threat, but it's unfortunate to that one who wanted him expelled, because that one didn't knew that I, Kiyotaka-kun's childhood friend helped him."

A threat? and using a total of 16.5M private points to expel him, just who it is?

"So you knew each other....You said you helped him but we didn't have enough points to transfer someone in our class. And Ayanokouji said that the one who want him expelled will give 500K points how did your classmates believe that easily?"

"Your class had only had 13 million points and I supplied the other 7 million. I can't disclose the details on why I had those points because it's a deal I made with someone. As for the other question



they received 200K private points as down payment and will receive 300K after I got expelled, and well I didn't have that much presence in my class I think that's also a factor."

"I see." Katsuragi-kun said "Sakayanagi said you are a threat—"

We heard the door opened and Mashima-sensei came in and proceeded behind the podium.

"You can continue that later." he said with a bleak face probably because someone will be expelled "Good work everyone. The voting had officially ended and had been tallied. Moving on to the results."

Mashima-sensei posted the results of the voting in the board

**Students with the most Praise Votes:**

**1. Sakayanagi Arisu — 37 --> GRANTED 1-PP**

2. Nishikawa Ryouko — 24

3. Ayanokouji Kiyotaka — 23

**Students with the most Censor Votes:**

**1. Totsuka Yahiko — 38 --> EXPELLED**

2. Katsuragi Kohei — 35

3. Shimizu Naoki — 10

No way.... I'm quite surprised that I got in second place but what surprised me more is that Ayanokouji-kun was just behind me with 1 praise vote.

Aside from the threat of Sakayanagi-san last night, I don't think many of my classmates voted for him since he just came to our class and we really don't know him. So that means he got most of those votes from other classes, his friends aside from his former class, is he really that close to other classes? If he was close to other classes without being noticed that he's close to them.... that's amazing.

"How absurd! What's going on!?" Katsuragi-kun stood up from his seat, raising his voice after he saw the results that are posted.

"K-Katsuragi-san... Why? Wha...?" Totsuka-kun looked at Katsuragi-kun with an expression of disbelief.

"What's going on here, sensei? The one being expelled should be me—"

"There haven't been any mistakes." Mashima-sensei cut Katsuragi-kun off.

"Katsuragi-kun, it seems you've been given some praise votes. How wonderful." Sakayanagi-san said with her usual smug smile.

Hearing that, Katsuragi-kun finally understood. This hadn't happened due to some kind of mistake. Rather, this was the outcome of one of Sakayanagi-san's schemes.

"Wait, Sakayanagi! The one who should've been expelled was me!"

"Expulsion? You? You weren't the target in the first place."

"Stop joking with me. You definitely said you were going to get rid of me!"

"Come to think of it, you're right, aren't you? I did say I was going to get rid of you, but... that was just a lie." Sakayanagi-san said as she smiled gently.

"Why... Why!?"

"It's simple. Totsuka-kun doesn't bring any benefits to Class A. On the other hand, you're sharp, and your reflexes aren't anything to scoff at either. This, combined with your calm head, makes you useful in your own way. This exam is perfect for disposing of somebody unnecessary, so only an idiot would get rid of someone who still has use left in them."

"Why would you do this in such an indirect way...?"

"Isn't it only natural for someone to do their best to avoid expulsion? There are a lot of praise votes floating around from other classes in this exam. If Totsuka-kun had gone and gathered them from the other classes in order to save himself, I don't believe we could've gotten him expelled."

Sakayanagi-san declared then looked at Ayankouji-kun and she added "Speaking of those floating praise votes, I don't think many of you will vote for Kiyotaka-kun here since you don't know his capabilities but look he took third place with 23 votes, meaning that he has connections in other classes which most of us didn't know about."

"Didn't you just told our class to vote for him?"

"No." she answered and asked "Can you please raise your hands for those who voted for him?"

Only 10 people raised their hands including me, Kamuro-san, Kitou-kun, Hashimoto-kun and Sakayanagi-san. And the others.... are all girls. Damn to think that he will be this famous in his first day here.

"See? He managed to gather 13 votes to other classes or did he?"

"What do you mean?"

"He didn't gather them, they personally voted for him. Right Kiyotaka-kun?"

"Well I also didn't expect that I will get this many praise votes, besides Honami was the only person who said she will give me her praise vote."

"Wait King, Honami you mean Ichinose?" Ayanokouji-kun nodded "Don't tell me sh—" Knowing what Hasimoto-kun will ask him, he interjected him calmly.

"We're just friends. Also, Thank you to the others here who voted for me, even though I just became your classmate today. I really appreciate it." he clarified while he bowed slightly showing his

appreciation to those who voted for him in our class.

"Honami? Don't tell me Ichinose-san? No way!" I think this is my other classmates thought. I will also be surprised if I hadn't talked to Amikura-chan and told me that Ichinose-san always talked about him.

"But to think that Ichinose will give her praise vote to King.... must be the power of T-rex."

I noticed that most of the boys laughed as he said that. And the girls were curious on what he just said.

"I told you don't call me that. It's quite disturbing." said Ayanokouji-kun as he had a quite heavy sigh.

"What do you mean by King and T-rex Hashimoto-kun??" I asked Hashimoto-kun who sat to my left side.

"You, don't wan—" like knowing where this talk will lead to Sakayanagi-san cut him off.

"Ehhem that's enough for now Hashimoto-kun and Nishikawa-san. See? he even had connections to Class-B's leader, and..." she paused and looked to Totsuka-kun "Thank you for your hard work, Totsuka-kun. Be sure to take care of yourself after you've left the school."

"D-damn...!" Totsuka-kun curled over as if he was about to collapse. Katsuragi-kun couldn't find the right words to comfort him. Totsuka-kun would have normally been overjoyed to find out Katsuragi-kun wasn't going to be expelled.

But now that he was being expelled himself, that didn't matter anymore. Instead, he could only feel resentment as he wondered why it had to be him instead of his friend.

If Katsuragi-kun had gotten expelled, Totsuka-kun would've been able to stay in Class A. And while he would've been displeased with it, he would've followed Sakayanagi-san all the way until graduation. And then, he would've become successful in life.

Even though he felt guilty for it, he had already vaguely begun to imagine his wonderful future as a graduate from Class A. But because of this sudden twist of fate, he had lost everything.

"Saving him with twenty million points... is probably impossible."

"Correct. Unfortunately, even if we added up all of our points, we still wouldn't have enough. And besides just like I said earlier I already used the points we had to save my dear childhood friend."

"...But why him..." Totsuka muttered silently but unfortunately Sakayanagi-san heard this.

"Ahh, because he is more capable than everyone in this room. I can guarantee that."

Wait, If it's coming from Sakayanagi-san herself does that mean he is equal or even greater than her? If it's the latter I guess our class will be more formidable than before. I'm really excited to

question him later.

"Wha—"

"Katsuragi-kun you wanted to asked earlier why Kiyotaka-kun is threat right?"

"....Yeah."

"I'll answer that while Totsuka-kun is still here, don't you think that it's terrifying that he controlled his former class without being noticed? Well there's the exception of Horikita-san since she was the cover for his actions, and she gained all the credit."

".....You mean he's the one behind the achievements of Class-C?"

"Yes he's the one."

"But how?"

"Like I said it's terrifying right? The defects, our classmates here and probably the other classes didn't notice him, controlling the whole class of defectives. I think you still have those questions about the island exam right?" Katsuragi-kun nodded "You can ask your questions later to him, since he's the one who singlehandedly defeated all of you back then, and you can judge him then after the questionings you had."

With nothing more to add Sakayanagi-san sat down then Katsuragi-kun followed. Silence fell in the room thinking about what Sakayanagi-san said about almost no one knowing what actions did Ayanokouji-kun took. And I think they were thinking how we were defeated back then.

Me? I feel excited since I will be able to question him I already got permission to Sakayanagi-san earlier, but I need to ask him first later. hehe

But I'm still a bit frustrated with Katsuragi-kun back then with the island exam since we had that contract with Ryuen-kun.

"Totsuka, there's... no way to overturn this decision." Mashima-sensei spoke definitively as he buried the pain within his heart. It's probably really hard for the outright Mashima-sensei to see one of his students leave, just because of an absurd exam like this.

"D-damn...! Dammit! Dammit...!"

"Totsuka, please come with me to the faculty room for the time being. I'll let you collect your things later."

"....." Totsuka was at a loss for words, unable to do anything but nod in response.

"""" ..... """"

Mashima-sensei left the room together with Totsuka-kun.

Now that I compiled the questions in my head, I need to interrogate him now to satisfy my curiosity. Not wasting time, I

stood up and approached Ayanokouji-kun's seat.

"Ayanokouji-kun, can I have a moment?"

"Hmm?"

"Ahh, I'm Nishikawa Ryouko. Nice to meet you."

"Nice to meet you too, Nishikawa."

"I thought of you the whole night yesterday. I'm really interested in you."

Yeah I'm really interested to question you and learn the truth about the achievements of your former class....

"....."

...Huh? what's with this silence?....WAIT!

""""EHHH??!!""""

".....AHHH! Wai—" It was at this moment I knew....

....I messed up.

"Ryouko-chan is acting faster than the speed of light."

Did I just really....

"How bold of you Nishikawa, confessing to the King the very first day of his transfer. This is really the power of the mighty T-rex."

I looked around in the classroom and saw my classmates with mischievous grins on their faces, the boys were laughing on what Hashimoto-kun said.

Again what's with the King and T-rex thing? No no no, I have a bigger problem right now.

I saw Kamuro-san glaring at me.....

OH MY GOD.... This the biggest blunder that I, Nishikawa Ryouko ever made....

"Damn, Nishikawa-chan. Good luck!"

"Kiyotaka-kun is such a sinful man indeed. To think that you took the heart of one of my beautiful and popular classmate so easily in the first day of you being here. Fufufu"

"No! No! No! No!!! That's not what I meant, I'm here to interrogate you." I said correcting my statement earlier but....

"Did I do something bad for you to interrogate me?" He asked with his calming monotone voice and his usual stoic expression "Or are you here like a police trying to interrogate me to capture my heart?"

"....." My heart skip a beat upon hearing those words.

Not gonna lie, that was smooth.

Stop it Ryouko!! you're not an easy girl that will be swayed so easily with such words, and not to a boy that you just conversed with for the first time.

""""....."""" My classmates stared on both of us in silence as they

heard those words.

"I'm just kidding Nishikawa, I think you need to choose your wording properly, I nearly misunderstood what you just told of me."

"The same goes for you!!" I exclaimed. AHHH that was really embarrassing... and what's wrong with this guy he's a smooth and an easy to talk person unlike what Kushida-chan said from before. So I was right that she lied and Mii-chan didn't?

"But that was smooth King look at her, you dealt a critical hit on her that she's blushing too much."

"Ehhh??" am I really?

"Yeah Ryouko you're beet red right now."

"That just caught me off-guard!"

"Fufufufu. Kiyotaka-kun even for a somewhat love-dead boy like you, playing with a maiden's heart is something you should never do."

"No, I'm just teasing her a bit, but it seems like I've gotten a bit overboard. Sorry about that Nishikawa." he apologized as he slightly bowed his head.

"No no. I'm the one who should apologize, Sorry Ayanokouji-kun." I apologized to him and turned my faced to Kamuro-san "And I'm sorry too Kamuro-san."

"Huh?! Why are you apologizing to me?"

"No, just felt like it. Hehehe."

"So? Why are you interrogating me Detective-chan?"

"Wait King I thought she would be a police since you called her one earlier?"

"Well she—" before Ayanokouji-kun spoke what's on his mind I interrupted him.

"Stop! I feel like you will say something embarrassing again, so that nickname is fine for now... I think."

"Pfffttt. Now you will know the feeling Detective-chan." said Kamuro-san

"Ehhhhh so this why is Kamuro is that way since yesterday, she had a hard time dealing with King."

But I think Kamuro-san didn't disliked it.

"Shut up, pervert!"

"So you're fine being called Detective-chan by King, Nishikawa?"

AGGHHH I felt kinda tired for some reason and I didn't even began to question him.

Kamuro-san stood up and she approached me "Good luck with him, Detective-chan." she whispered as she smirked lightly and get back to her seat.

Those were the words that I whispered earlier..... Now I'm the one who's getting flustered here.

"Fufufu, Nishikawa-san instead of questioning him like you asked earlier. It seems like the class is watching a Rom-Com episode here instead of you interrogating him."

I saw most of my classmates laughing, with Sakayanagi-san's remark.

"HAHAHA, Hime is right, and the two of you have a great chemistry already."

It seems like questioning him will be harder than I thought...

*To be Continued.....*

---

**EXTRA!! Sumi-chan POV**

"Fufufu. Now I will be the one who will tease you later Nishik-, No, Detective-chan."

"Why are you using my special laugh Sumi-san?"

"Just felt like it. Elementary-chan"

"Fufufu. Also, let me join you teasing Detective-chan later."

""Fufufufu""

-chan ftw

...

Kinda cringe Chapter again

...

## Chapter 13: Cute, Beautiful, and Sexy - Class-B Exam

### *Hoshinomiya POV*

"Congratulations everyone, for not letting anyone of your classmates or friends getting expelled. Your cute, beautiful, and sexy teacher is proud of you tehee~."

#### **Students with the most Praise Votes:**

1. *Ichinose Honami* — 39 --> **GRANTED 1-PP**

2. Amikura Mako — 20

3. Minamikata Kozue — 18

#### **Students with the most Censor Votes:**

1. *Kanzaki Ryuuji* — 39--> **EXPELLED --> CLASS PAID 20M TO OVERTURN HIS EXPULSION**

2. Shibata So — 38

3. Hamaguchi Tetsuya — 37

"Thank you sensei." Honami-chan then stood up then faced her classmates "Everyone thank you for granting me the protection point."

"You deserve the protection point Honami-chan." said Amikura-chan

"And because you are our leader we have to do our best to prevent you from expulsion in the future." Shiranami-chan added

"Yeah, that's right."

"Also, Kanzaki-kun, Shibata-kun, and Hamaguchi-kun thank you for volunteering as the ones to be voted against."

"No no, it's actually thanks to you that no one in our class is expelled." Shibata-kun replied as Hamaguchi-kun nodded.

"Yeah Shibata was right, it's no problem." said Kanzaki-kun he then shift his gaze upon me and asked "Sensei about Ayanokouji's placement in Class-A, did he switched classes?"

"Yeah sensei I'm also meaning to ask this earlier but did Kiyot— Ayanokouji-kun really switched classes?"

Ara~ does Honami-chan perhaps..... Let me tease her a little bit.

"Ahh Kiyotaka-kun transferred to Class-A last night."

"How did Ayanokouji manage to transfer classes?" asked Kanzaki-kun in a serious tone.

"So he really did. Wait why sensei is calling Ayanokouji-kun by



his first name?" asked Honami-chan curiously.

"Are, you jealous Honami-chan~?."

"Eeh? N-no, I'm j-just curious."

"Oya oya, Are you perhaps in a secret relationship with Ayanokouji-kun, sensei~?" Amikura-chan teased which made Honami-chan gulp.

"Yeah, last night we were together. And he was really amazing~..."

""EHH?!!""

"Just kidding hehe~ I was together with Mashima-kun and Sae-chan last night when he transferred to Class-A."

"Sensei can you please stop joking around and answer my question from earlier." Ehh why so serious? Well it's Kanzaki-kun afterall.

"To answer your question Kanzaki-kun of course they paid the required 20M private points."

"They??"

"He paid the 20M points with Sakayanagi-chan and Kamuro-chan last night...."

**\*Flashback**

"Good evening to you our dear teachers" Sakayangai-chan greeted us, she's with Kamuro-chan and....

The topic of our earlier talk about the false accusation of rape made by Kushida-chan...

....Ayanokouji-kun.

Ehh what an interesting bunch.

"Ara~ What are you kids doing here late at night?"

"Good evening sensei, Masumi here want to drink some beer." Ayanokouji-kun teased with his usual monotone voice.

"Hey!" Kamuro-chan elbowed Ayanokouji-kun in his waist. Pfft..

"Oww. I'm just teasing you a bit."

"Hmmp."

Oya oya~ it's rare for Kamuro-chan to see her like this even when she's with Sakayanagi-chan. To think that she would soften up to Ayanokouji-kun.

"Do you want some Kamuro-chan?" I asked her teasingly, offering my glass half-full of beer, and Kamuro-chan just glared at Ayanokouji-kun.

"Stop it Hoshinomiya, So? What do you kids want?" The ever so serious Mashima-kun asked.

"Fufufu. We have some important business with you Mashima-sensei."

"Me? And what could it be Sakayanagi?"

"Ehh, and what could it be? And is Ayanokouji-kun involved in

that 'business' of yours??"

"Fufufu. Can you guess Hoshinomiya-sensei?? And for that second question, yes, Kiyotaka-kun is involved."

I could see Sae-chan looking quite nervous when Sakayanagi-chan said that he's involve. Seeing one of her most formidable student with two of Mashima-kun's students.

She's been quiet this whole time since they arrived, I already have a guess and if my guess was right this will be a huge blow on her class.....

Mashima-kun also stayed quiet as if also realizing what these kids are up to.

"Etttto Ayanokouji-kun, you want to ask me out on a date? Tee-hee." I teased him hoping to get a reaction from him but failed.

Mashima-kun sighed "To think that you will joke around in a time like this."

"Fufufu. You're wrong sensei, to think that you would assume such a thing."

"Too bad. Yosh, here's my actual guess, you will transfer to Class-A right?" I answered again, now in a quizzical manner.

**\*BAM!**

Sae-chan slammed the table after hearing my answer "You're joking right?!! Ayanokouji?"

"Calm down Chabashira, Ayanokouji do you have the necessary points for class transfer?."

I think he already knew the answer to his question, that's why they are here right now. As a fellow teacher and a former student in this school, it's just the both of us can't believe a first year student manage to accumulate 20M points.

"Yeah."

"I'm just a little curious Ayanokouji-kun, how did you get 20M points?"

"Arisu's class is missing some of the points needed around 7M, I already supplied those points and transferred them to her."

So he didn't accumulate 20M points but have Sakayanagi-chan help him, but it's still amazing that he manage to get 7M points in his first year despite being in a defective class, maybe he got those points from his upperclassmen though extortion/blackmailing or maybe made some deal with them. I think he won't disclose the details, let's stop prying too much.

"Sakayanagi are you sure about this, using your class's funds for transferring him?"

"Yeah Mashima-sensei, and besides this was already planned a day after the announcement of that stupid exam."

"....Is that so... So you deemed him more capable than Katsuragi

that you planned to expel tomorrow?"

"Yeah that's right sensei, speaking of capability I can confidently say that no one can match him in our year." she replied "And besides... No nevermind you will know it tomorrow. Fufufu."

Ehhh, for her to say that he's more capable than anyone in their year, does this also means that she's also included in there?

"You overestimate me too highly, Arisu."

"Fufufu, I'm just speaking of the truth."

"So why the sudden transfer?"

"Those defects betrayed him, if you know that you will be betrayed why not betray them first, right? And besides if my cute little childhood friend asks me I'll easily comply."

Ahhh so Sae-chan's class will expel Ayanokouji-kun in the exam tomorrow.

"Ara~ so the secret weapon of Sae-chan will be gone now. And to think that you're a childhood friend of Sakayanagi-chan."

"Secret weapon? Fufufufu. I think him being a secret weapon will end tomorrow since he will be more active in our class affairs."

I don't know how capable Ayanokouji-kun is, but judging from Sae-chan's silence and kind of depress expression, it means it will have a big impact on her class... And besides I already have a feeling that he's dangerous.

Among us first year teachers Sae-chan and I are the ones who really wanted to reach Class-A because somewhere in our hearts we can't move on from the past.

"Mashima-sensei can we begin the transferring of points?"

".....Uhh, yeah."

.....

"...done."

"I did receive the points, Ayanokouji will be a student of Class-A starting now, I will process the papers later."

"Congrats, Kiyō. To think that we will be classmates starting tomorrow." Kamuro-chan said as she smiled lightly, how cute.

"Fufufu. To think that Masumi-san will be this happy."

"Congrats Ayanokouji-kun, say if my class recruited you to join my class, specifically Honami-chan, would you join?"

"I don't think I will, since my methods on how I do things will contradict the methods of your class. And besides I think your class won't have the necessary points needed after the exam."

"Ehhh, how sad. But we still have 2 years!" I said then faced Sae-chan "Won't you congratulate your student for reaching Class-A."

"....."

"Or should I say former student."

"Stop it Hoshinomiya."

"No fun~. To think Mashima-kun will side with Sae-chan,"

"Mashima-sensei, there's something else I would like to consult with."

"And what it is Ayanokouji?"

"Regarding the exam tomorrow, will it be automated system or a manual one?"

"It will be automated."

"Can I ask you to put my name on the last spot of the list?"

"Unfortunately I can't comply with that, since your name will be sorted in order."

"Is that so, then can I buy that request?"

"What?"

"I said if I can buy that request to put my name on the last spot or bottom of the list of Class-A."

This boy is planning something, I can feel it.

"I think it's possible if I bought that request since the sorting of names will not affect the actual voting, right?"

"Yeah, and why would you want your name the last spot?"

"To see how ignorant my former classmates are, also there's one more request, ever since the trial earlier when Kushida was expelled, my former class will become Class-D next month or more specifically in our second year. Classes don't change unless it's the beginning of the month on the same day we received our points, right?"

"Yeah, what about it?"

"Fufufu. How interesting, Kushida-san is expelled?"

"I'll tell you the details later Arisu." he said to Sakayanagi-chan then faced back Mashima-kun again "Can I also request that their class list to be renamed Class-D in the voting tomorrow, this will also not affect the voting since the class naming doesn't matter if their names are there. And besides their class will be Class-D in April. Meaning that they will know in advance, if they will notice it."

"Fufufu. You're quite the sadist too, Kiyotaka-kun."

"Ehhhhh, do you have any idea on what Ayanokouji-kun's planning, Sakayanagi-chan?"

"More or less sensei, besides everyone here can guess it if you think of it. Here's a clue Hoshinomiya-sensei 'to see how ignorant' his former class is." she then faced Mashima-kun and asked "Mashima-sensei how much points is needed for Kiyotaka-kun's request? I will personally pay for it since I found it an interesting idea."

"That will be 60K points in total, 30K for each request."

These prices are justified by the school rules, changing your

position in your class list which includes exams, for physical activities, to take an early break while on classes, data manipulation, and so on.

His requests falls in the data manipulation of an exam as long as the actual rules of the exam were not affected, it can be done.

But sometimes there are exceptions, for example changing your name in the class list, it can be done in other activities like using a nickname in the list, but since expulsion is on the line it won't be allowed.

I still don't get it.... Asking to put your name in the last spot of the list is a good idea to see if his former classmates will notice the change.

But why asked to change the class name that will change next month, won't they easily noti—

"Can I ask how did your former class betray you, Ayanokouji-kun?" I asked to confirm some of my suspicions

"They were bribed with private points to expel me. They received an initial payment and will receive more after I got expelled."

For private points huh...

...This is just a guess, probably he personally knew how some... No, most of his classmates thought process and mannerisms.

Am I being too delusional that Ayanokouji-kun knew that like he's some sort of psychologist? I'm not, this just somehow proved my suspicions as I observed him when I'm teaching their class as he just usually observed what's around him not listening to my lessons or most of the times just watch the scenery through the window.

Yeah, it was all the quiet ones.

"Can I ask how much did they received?"

"I can't disclose the amount since this is a problem between students. We don't want our teachers to meddle with our disputes with other students."

Hmmm maybe it's a reasonable amount to expel a classmate... But who will pay those points to have a first year student expelled....

He already knew that most of them will ignore or will not notice the minor changes in the voting tomorrow.

Currently they were thinking of the points that they will receive if they expelled him, they will be occupied with those thoughts. And probably they won't notice that their class was demoted.

"Looks like you already got it sensei. Fufufu, Those defects tried to betrayed him. If they learned that the one they tried to expel was the one who was behind their success they will surely regret it."

"So the previous achievements of Chabashira's class was because of him, Sakayanagi?" Mashima-kun asked trying to confirm that statement of Sakayanagi-chan

"Yeah, why don't you ask his former homeroom teacher, she's been quiet for some time now, and besides you already knew the answer right, Mashima-sensei ever since the Island Exam?" Sakayanagi-chan answered "We should get going now, after all our business here is done."

Yeah we knew, since after the exam one thing happened, the change of leaders on Sae-chan's class. At first I thought that it was just really Horikita-chan's poor health but after the results were tallied as they guessed all of other class leaders, one thing is just sure, he was really behind it.

How did I really confirm it? When I saw that Sae-chan and him meeting secretly. Tee-hee~.

"Ehhh? Why don't you stay for a while, I've got lot of questions regarding Ayanokouji-kun, and maybe he will change his mind to go to my class if Honami-chan wants and besides I really want you now~"

"How bold of you sensei. Fufufu, anyways we have to go, we have some other things to do for the exam tomorrow.

"Ehhh. Not fair, childhood friend-chan is monopolizing him." I said while pouting, I think I'm a little drunk by now. Te-hee.

"Masumi."

"Hmm?"

"Will you not drink some beer before we go back?"

"Hey! Stop that kind of teasing already, I'll beat you up."

"Fufufu. You're making her flustered Kiyotaka-kun."

"You can stay here if you want to drink Kamuro-chan~" I said "Maybe we can talk about Ayanokouji-kun while we're drinking."

"Not this again." Mashima-kun had an irritated sigh as he faced me. "Stop that Hoshinomiya, they're minors, you kids can go now it's getting late."

"Goodbye our dear teachers. See you tomorrow."

"I wish you could stay a bit longer. Anyways goodnight and bye bye~. Think about my proposal Kiyo-kyun!" As I said that nickname Kamuro-chan glared at me, ohh scary.

"Fufufu, to think that you also gain the attention Class-B's homeroom teacher, You're becoming popular Kiyotaka-kun."

And with that they left. I tried to talk to Sae-chan but she just ignored me and she just drunk until she passed out. What a troublesome girl, can she go to her class tomorrow?

She lost two students today and another one will leave tomorrow due to the exam.

Her class will be in a huge disadvantage in the upcoming exams since she lost Kushida-chan who has a vast social network and Ayanokouji-kun who was one of the most important key member of

her class.

And tomorrow will she lose another capable student?

**\*Flashback ends**

".... And that's all of it." Of course I excluded on telling them some of my speculations on what he was planning to do.

"So that's what happened, I'm a little sad that his former class betrayed him. But I'm still glad that he's still here in the school." Honami-chan said as she sighed in relief. "But to think Kiyotaka-kun was one of the pillar of their class. No, his former class. Just like I thought he's really amazing."

"Ehh to think Kiyo-kyun received such a compliment from Honami-chan." I said in a teasing manner.

"It's just that I'm his friend and even I didn't realize that he was like a mastermind of his former class." she replied.

"Mastermind huh? Now that you mentioned it Kiyo-kyun was really like the mastermind of Sae-chan's class."

"Kiyo-kyun is such a cute nickname Sensei." said Amikura-chan, she then faced Honami-chan as she grinned "To think Honami-chan's crush is an amazing person."

"M-mako-chan!!, What are you saying?!" she exclaimed with a flustered expression.

""Ehh?!!"" most of the boys are shocked with that sudden revelation of Honami-chan's love interest.

"Oya oya, I was right that you also like Kiyo-kyun~."

"I think most of the girls in our class already knew that you like him." Chihiro-chan said. "And to think that he and Sakayanagi-san are childhood friend, and she's also close to Kamuro-san."

"Right? Honami-chan has a lot of rivals."

"Mako-chan!!" she exclaimed with a flustered face.

"I'm just teasing you a bit, to think that you will be this flustered."

"I think he will become popular in the coming days since he's the first Class-D student to transfer to Class-A in this school."

"By the way sensei, is it true that Kushida-san was expelled?" Shibata-kun asked

"I'm also curious sensei, what happened?" Amikura-chan added.

I explained the trial that happened yesterday, about the false accusation of rape made by Kushida-chan to Kiyo-kyun. Most of my students didn't want to beleive it, since they see her as the angel of Class-D. I also said that she was a goody two shoes who befriending the students to gather secrets and use them for her advantage when she needed.

"No way!"

"Well if you want the evidence submitted by Kiyo-kyun you can ask for it in the student council. Maybe some of you told her some

of your secrets?"

Some of them nodded, her social skills to lead a person to blurt some their secrets is amazing, she could use those secrets to take advantage of those people.

"But too bad for her I guess since she was already expelled, she's one of the foundation of Sae-chan's class aside from Horikita-chan and Hirata-kun. I didn't really know the details on why she would falsely accuse Kiyo-kyun, since the details of yesterday's trial were limited. They allowed to publicize the evidence submitted by Kiyo-kyun since it was a serious matter and it could ruin his reputation or be labeled as a rapist since the one who was involve was a popular student unlike Kiyo-kyun who was underwhelming or has no presense in the eyes of many students."

"I'm still a bit conflicted about this because both of them are my friends but I trust Kiyotaka-kun more than Kushida-san, since he was the one who helped me when I was in trouble and in this exam he also helped us."Honami-chan declared which surprised most of his classmates

"Ehhh?!!" some of her classmates exclaimed

"What do you mean Ichinose?" asked Kanzaki-kun

"He was the one who helped me to move on from my past." She answered "And it was also his idea to negotiate with Ishizaki-kun and Ibuki-san.That's why we had the points to nulify the expulsion."

So he was also deeply involved with Honami-chan, that's why she really admire him. He also had a connection with Ishizaki-kun's class.

"So that's why you trust and like him?" I asked

"Ahh... Y-yes sensei, and besides I'm part of the student council, I can verify the evidence later." she answered "By the way sensei, what does Kiyotaka-kun meant when he said that we contradict each other's method?"

"Hmm? I don't know, maybe you should ask him personally."

"Okay, Thank you sensei."

"Ne ne Honami-chan why don't you seduce him to join our class."

"W-what are you saying sensei!"

"That's right Honami-chan just seduce him." Amikura-chan said

"Te hee~ just kidding, but I really think he will be a great if he joined our class."

"I think I can agree with that, but we are currently low on points..."

"Don't worry you still have 2 more years, just do your best."

"I will try..."

"See sensei, she really likes him that much, as she easily complied on having him on our class."



They're teasing her too much, well that also includes me. Sorry Honami-chan~

"Are there any more questions?" Yosh it looks like I'm done for today "Looks like there are no more, with this class will be dismissed. Have a great day everyone.~"

### **Kanzaki POV**

Sensei left after those revelations that happened in Horikita's class.

"Now some of the things I'm curious about makes sense." I mumbled

"What do you mean Kanzaki?" Shibata asked.

"You remember we had an alliance with his former class right?" Shibata nodded "Everytime we had a meeting with Horikita he's always there."

"Now that you mention it. Probably most of the students thought that he's just a tagalong with Horikita-san, it's really surprising that he's the mastermind of their class."

"After everything sensei and Ichinose revealed I think Ayanokouji is one of the the students we should be wary of. To think that he had gone unnoticed for almost a year."

"I agree with that..." Ichinose said "... but I owe him for saving me and for also helping our class."

"How sweet Honami-chan."

She really liked him huh? But this type of things will just hinder our class for reaching Class-A

"I think we owe him this time." I said "But I really think that he's one of the dangerous students that we should be wary of for reaching Class-A."

"Ehh, Kanzaki-kun you're too serious you know."

"No Mako-chan, I think Kanzaki-kun is right." replied Ichinose "But don't worry Kanzaki-kun this and that are two different matters."

"Fine, I'm just warning you."

I hope you really uphold what you said.

Ichinose had a deal with Ishizaki and Ibuki, to think that Ayanokouji acted like a middleman with their deal.

So he also had connections with them...

"Ichinose."

"Hmm?"

"You remembered that before winter break, Ryuen was looking for someone in Horikita's class right?"

"... Ahh you mean..." she stopped as if also realizing what I just realized.

"It's illogical for Ishizaki and Ibuki to rebel against Ryuen, since

they wanted to save him in this exam."

"What do you mean Kanzaki?" asked Shibata in a confused manner.

"The one he's looking for that time was Kiyotaka-kun is what you're implying right, Kanzaki-kun?" I nodded "So there's a probability that Kiyotaka-kun was the one who made him step down as the leader of their class."

"Yeah that's what I also thought. Behind the scenes where most of us don't know he had connections with every class leaders including you."

"Now that you mention it, there's Sakayanagi-san, Honami-chan, Ryuen-kun, and Horikita-san." Amikura replied.

To think that he also had these connections and I think it's not just them, I won't be surprised if he also had connections with some upperclassmen.

There's also the thing that sensei told us about their contradiction of methods, I think what he meant by that was Ichinose's naivety, which I can somewhat agree, after being her second in command for the entire year.


If our guess was right that he was also linked with Ryuen's stepping down as a leader and most importantly on what sensei told us about his former class achievements....

....He's dangerous.

***To be Continued.....***

---

I think Chie-chan-sensei is really smart behind her usual childish behavior.

-chan ftw

...

## Chapter 14: Forward - Class-C Exam

### *3rd Person POV Ryuuen's Class*

Most students of Ryuuen's class were kind of relieved because their former tyrant leader would be expelled.....

Ever since the announcement of the exam, where expulsion was on the line most of them agreed to expel Ryuuen.

*but.....*

Sakagami entered the room.

"Good job everyone, the voting had officially ended and had been tallied. I will now post the results of the Class Poll special exam."

Sakagami posted the results of the exam...

#### **Students with the most Praise Votes:**

- 1. Ryuuen Kakeru — 46 --> GRANTED 1-PP**
2. Kaneda Satoru — 30
3. Shiina Hiyori — 25

#### **Students with the most Censor Votes:**

- 1. Manabe Shiho — 33--> EXPELLED**
2. Ibuki Mio — 30
3. Kondo Reo — 25

""HUHHH?!!""

"No way!! how the heck did Ryuuen...."

"Sensei you're not mistaken by these results right?"

"What the hell!!!" Manabe exclaimed "How am I the one who's expelled."

"Shiho-chan..."

'Serves you right bitch.' Ibuki thought as she smirked.

Everyone was shocked after Sakagami posted the results, even Ryuuen who anticipated that he's going to be expelled was quite surprised by the results.

"Ryuuen What the hell have you done??!" Tokitou one of Ryuuen's haters during his leadership asked.

Not only Ryuuen was saved but he was also given the protection point.

"Huh? You're asking me? I'm also quite surprised by these results." Ryuuken asked "Ishizaki, Ibuki did you do something?"

But before they could answer Sakagami interjected

"You can discuss that later, as for these results it was the official one, Ryuuken was the student who got the most Censor Votes in this class, he got 35..."

"Then..."

"...But he also got the most Praise Votes in this exam for your whole year, with a grand total of 81 votes."

**{Note: 38 from Class-A (all except Katsuragi, Totsuka, and Kiyo), 39 from Class-B (all except Ichinose), and 4 votes from his class (Ibuki, Albert, Hiyori, and Ishizaki).}**

"What the... How did he got those many praise votes!"

"I can't disclose more details than that since it's prohibited by the school."

'It has to be that Monster or that Loli or maybe even both of them has set this up, since he joined her. There's also Ishizaki, Ibuki and Ichinose, I won't get those many praise votes if they're not involve, since the total praise votes I got were approximately from two classes.' Ryuuken thought

"WHY?! WHY?! Why am I the one who's going to be expelled, DAMN IT!!!!"

"Do you have 20M points to nullify the expulsion, Manabe?" Sakagami asked

"....." she didn't answer

"...Then Manabe come to the faculty with me, you can pack your things later."

"Damn it..."

"Shiho-chan." Her friends Yabu, Morofuji, and Yamashita were in on the verge of tears as they hugged their friend.

"Then let's go. With this class is dismissed, see you again in Monday."

Sakagami left with the crying Manabe, her friends were sobbing in their seats due to her expulsion.

Ryuuken stood up and walked towards the door.

"Ryuuken bastard, where are you going?! Explain what have you done!"

"Huh?! Are you an Idiot Tokitou? Like I said I don't know what happened. I'll confirm my suspicions and ask the ones who's behind it." Ryuuken replied "And besides you know something about this right Ishizaki and Ibuki?"

"We were only involved with the nullification of your expulsion

as we made a deal with Ichinose." Ibuki replied.

"WHAT?!" most of their classmates exclaimed as Ibuki revealed that information.

"Yeah, we don't know where the other votes came from." Ishizaki added.

"Why the hell would you save him? You're the one who made him step-down due to his tyrant leadership right?"

"He's essential for our class to reach Class-A, we won't be able to beat Horikita's class if we don't have Ryuen-san." Ishizaki replied

"Horikita? Why would you want to defeat her class. Ain't it Sakayanagi's class."

'He slipped up.' Ryuen and Ibuki thought.

"Tsk. I'm leaving. I'm wasting time on you guys." Ryuen said as he exit the door.

"That damn bastard...."

"Anooo, Ibuki-san and Ishizaki-kun I have something to show you, if you would...."

.....

.....

### **Hiyori POV**

Earlier in the morning my book buddy, Ayanokouji-kun messaged me.

#### ***\*Flashback***

[Good morning Hiyori, can I request something?]

[Good Morning Ayanokouji-kun, what is it?]

[Later when the exam results are revealed, show the next message I will send to Ibuki and Ishizaki.]

[Ahh so it's just a simple request. I will do it.]

[Just don't think too much on the message I will send since they are the ones who are involved.]

[Hmm Okay.]

*[Ishizaki, Ibuki. I'm sure you will be surprised by the results of the exam, You can disclose some information about what really happened on the rooftop since I will really get some troublesome attention after this exam, just don't involve or mention anything about the other person who's under my protection.]*

Rooftop? Under his protection?

Just like I thought he was involve with Ryuen's sudden change and someone else was involved...

[Hmmm, I have some questions about that message of yours.]

[Well you'll know later. And I'll tell you the other details after the exam.]

[I hope you understand. Thank you Hiyori.]

[No no, it's just a simple request...]

[Ohh by the way Ayanokouji-kun about the book.....]

We chatted for a while about books until I started to get ready for school. I still wonder about that message he wanted me to show to Ibuki-san and Ishizaki-kun...

[Have a great day Ayanokouji-kun.]

[You too Hiyori.....]

### ***\*Flashback ends***

"Anooo, Ibuki-san and Ishizaki-kun I have something to show you, if you would."

"What is it Shiina-san?"

"Etto it's a message from Ayanokouji-kun."

"From Ayanokouji-san?"

'-san?' I think most of my classmates were surprised by the use of honorifics of Ishizaki-kun to my book buddy.

"Let me see it." Ibuki-san said as she read the message along with Ishizaki-kun.

"So he was also involved in this."

"I don't really get it, I thought he wanted to stay behind the shadows for a while."

"Idiot, didn't you see his name on Class-A? He transferred classes, I think that's what he meant by attention."

"So he's name is in Class-A..... HUH?!!!" Ishizaki-kun exclaimed

"You really are an idiot Ishizaki, didn't you check his name properly?" Ibuki-san asked.

"Wait, Ayanokouji you mean that guy from Horikita's class, he transferred? And what do you mean behind the shadows, also why are you using honorifics with him, Ishizaki?" Nishino-san asked a lot of questions.

"No way someone managed to transfer to Class-A?" Kaneda-kun added.

"I'll let Ibuki explain the details. I'll follow Ryuen-san and confirm if he really transferred." Ishizaki-kun said "Wanna go with me Albert?"

"YES!" Albert-kun replied.

"HEY IDIOT! Why are you dumping all of this to me!"

"I think I will slip up again and mention the one under his protection." He said in a low voice that only me and Ibuki-san could hear. "And besides I want to confirm if Ayanokouji-san really transferred to Sakayanagi's class."

I still don't know who's the person 'under his protection' maybe a

former classmate?

"Tsk." Ibuki-san clicked her tongue "Shiina help me convince the class since this will be troublesome for me to explain."

"Okay, Ibuki-san."

Ibuki-san explained who was really the one who got Ryuen-kun step down as the leader of our class the one that he's looking for before our winter break, the one he called 'X', the real mastermind of Horikita-san's class.

I'm surprised that Ayanokouji-kun can fight and to top it off, he had beaten the four of them. And to think that my book buddy was really an amazing person, I'm glad that I'm one of his friends.

"Do you think we'd believe that bullshit?!" Tokitou-kun exclaimed "As if a single person can defeat the four of you and Albert was also included!"

"Yeah! I won't believe that Ryuen-san and Albert would lose to some random guy from that class!" Komiya-kun added.

"Did I asked you to believe it?" Ibuki san asked in return. "Guhh How troublesome, it's up to you to believe what I just said. And besides him transferring to Class-A was some kind of proof that he is more than what he let on."

"So someone from that class was really like a mastermind, just like Ryuen deducted from before. Wait can you explain what you and Ichinose-san's deal was?" Nishino-san asked

"We let them loan our points for them to have no one expelled in their class."

" 'Our'? "

"I guess it's fine to reveal it now. Ryuen, that bastard had planned from the beginning to accumulate 800M points to have all of us transfer to Class-A." Ibuki-san replied

Some of my classmates didn't want to believe that since to them he was a tyrant leader. While many were surprised that Ryuen-kun was planning something like that for us to advance to Class-A.

"Before anyone can complain about what I said, AGAIN IT'S UP TO YOU IF YOU FUCKING BELIEVE THE '*BULLSHIT*' I JUST SAID." she said as she glared at Tokitou-kun.

Tokitou-kun who just complained this whole time fell silent on what Ibuki-san said.

"To think that he's planning something like that from the start." Nishino-san replied.

"But it's impossible to accumulate that amount of points in our three years here." Kaneda-kun said "But you mean to say if not for that Ayanokouji guy, Ryuen-san's plans from the past would have been successful?"

"I don't know but I think we should have been in Class-B by now

if 'X' didn't interfere. But now that he was in Sakayanagi's class...."

"Ryuuen-san would be necessary in our class for us to rise huh?" Kaneda-kun added "So if we expelled him in our class today we would remain Class-C or worst we would be back to Class-D."

"Class-C?" Nishino-san asked "We are Class-D now right?!"

"Didn't you noticed that our class was labeled Class-C again when we voted?" Kaneda-kun replied as he adjusted his glasses "So something must have happened in their class. I think right now, Class-D can be easily crushed by our class if the so called 'X' is not there anymore."

With Kaneda-kun's some sort of deduction some of my classmates began to celebrate as they heard that were back to Class-C again. I think most of them didn't noticed that we're in Class-C during the time we had voted from earlier. But from what I remember classes would just change at the beginning of the month....

"Yeah that's right and if what Ibuki said was true we can also crush Ichinose-chan's class!" Komiya-kun added.

"But here's my last question how did Ryuuen get the protection point if you only made a deal with Ichinose-san?" Nishino-san asked

"That's what I'm also curious about." Kaneda-kun added

"... I don't know." Ibuki-san replied "I think Ayanokouji did something again, Shiina did Ayanokouji said something about that?"

"No. He just said that even you and Ishizaki-kun would be surprised by the results, that's all. But I think he's also involve since he knew something about it. Or maybe Sakayanagi-san?"

"Sakayanagi huh? Well no need to delve into it too much since we will know it later. I don't care if you believed what I just said but that's all from me, you can confirm it with the other three later. I'm going home."

With that Ibuki-san walks towards her seat, picked up her bag and proceeded to the door.

After those revelations especially the one where Ryuuen-kun planned to accumulate 800M points for us to move to Class-A, most of our classmates were glad that Ryuuen-kun somewhat cared for our class.

Of course there are those who still disagreed with him since he was a tyrant leader, which includes Tokitou-kun, Yajima-san and Manabe-san's friend group which includes Yabu-chan, Yamashita-chan and Morofuji-chan. They are still sad that their friend got expelled.

But I think our class can move forward now.

With that Thank you Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun.



### ***Yabu Nanami POV***

Damn it. Damn it. Damn it.

Why does it always end up like this, did I do something wrong again?

Where did it all go wrong.

Why does every single time when someone became important to me they always leave me.

"..... the 'X' from Horikita's class was Ayanokouji...." Ibuki said as I was still grimacing due to Shiho's expulsion.

So he was the one who set us up from the cruise ship, I had my suspicions on him since it was only him and Yukimura who saw us that time with Karuizawa. And now he was also somewhat involve in Shiho's expulsion.

All we just wanted with Karuizawa that time was for her to apologize to Rika because she humiliated her in front of many people, just how did it end up like this...

Damn it!

Shiho was not a bad girl, I think she's one of the most kind people here in our class, she was just misunderstood by her actions....

...she was worried with Rika that time...

But now she's expelled...

One of the people who I thought as a real friend was leaving me again...

...

...

Should I expose Karuizawa that she was bullied from the past?

...

...

No, I can't do that since that guy still had the evidence that we bullied Karuizawa. If I did that Saki, Rika and I would be expelled.

Then, what the hell should I do?

We can't do anything now since Ryuen would probably be back as our leader, which I hated.

...

...

Again and again they leave me...

...

...

I'm tired of this!

I'm sick of this!

...

...

...

...

*...Maybe I should just die...*

***To be Continued.....***

---

-chan ftw

...

## Chapter 15: Superiority Complex-chan's Revival?

### *3rd Person POV*

"Ryuuen-san!" Ishizaki called out to Ryuuen who was walking in the hallway.

Ryuuen wants to know if 'That Monster' and 'That Loli' were involved with the protection point he received.

"Ishizaki, Albert... What did you guys want?"

"No, we're coming along with you to check if Ayanokouji-san really transferred."

Ryuuen sighed "So you didn't check the class list properly?" He nodded "So how were you involved with my salvation from expulsion?"

Ishizaki explained what deal he and Ibuki made with Ichinose. He also mentioned that Ibuki right now was disclosing some information about what happened in the rooftop excluding the name of Karuizawa who was under the protection of Ayanokouji.

"So we can conclude that the one who gave me those votes would be Sakayanagi huh?"

"But why would she-"

"That's why I'm going there to confirm it." Ryuuen interjected "But first can I assume that I will be back as the leader of the class again?"

"Ibuki and Shiina-san are currently convincing the class, though I don't know to what extent they had convinced them. Right Albert?"

"YES!"

"Kukuku before we proceed there, why don't we go to Suzune's class first."

"For what, Ryuuen-san?"

"To torment her, I'm pretty sure she was also surprised that the Monster have joined the Loli." Ryuuen said then he smirked "I'm planning on crushing their class since it's easier now after that we'll crush Ichinose, then I'll make them work for us to defeat the current Class-A. This would be fun. KUKUKUKU."

"AS EXPECTED OF BOSS."

"Kukuku, then let's go."

Ryuuen arrived at the front door of Class-D he overheard Horikita's question before opening the door.

*"So care to explain yourselves??" Horikita asked "As I asked earlier why didn't you tell me or Hirata-kun about that message, and why did you get easily bribed by that unknown sender?"*

"So they were bribed huh?"

*\*BAM* He then opened the door, slamming it to make his grand entrance.

"Kukuku, it seems like the monster really transferred to the class of that Loli."

"Ryuuen-kun..." Horikita-replied "So you're still here, I thought your class expelled you in this exam."

"Yeah, I'm just here to say my goodbyes especially you, so can you give me a goodbye kiss before I leave, or maybe we can do something in my room tonight?"

"You bastard!! Ryuuen, get out of here!" Sudou exclaimed as he was about to approach Ryuuen and planned to punch him.

"I'm not talking to you, shoo shoo."

"Oi!, don't treat me like something like a dog, Ryuuen!!"

"Sudou-kun stop it and go back to your seat." said Horikita with an annoyed expression "Can you stop provoking us and answer my question?"

"Kukuku, a Monster and a Loli saved me and they even grant me the protection point."

"Huh?!!" Horikita and most defectives were surprised that not only he was saved from expulsion but he was also granted by the protection point. "Don't joke around I heard from some rumors that your class will expel you, and besides there's no way you would get a protection point."

"Kukuku. Why don't you check the results later it seems like they will post it on the bulletin board in the first floor."

"..... By monster and loli you mean Ayanokouji-kun and Sakayanagi-san?"

"Kukuku. That's right."

"There's your answer Horikita-san!!" Shinohara exclaimed "That gloomy bastard was already colluding not only with Sakayanagi-san but also with that tyrant."

"That's right! Maybe he's also part of Haruki's expulsion!" Ike added where Miyamoto and Ijuin agreed.

"Kukuku, HAHAAAA. To think that your classmates would be defective in this extent!"

"What did you say? You bastard?!!"

"Sudou-kun sit! And shut up for a moment. The same goes for the rest of you, Aren't you the ones who betrayed him first?"

"You really treat him like a dog huh?" Ryuuken asked mockingly as Sudou just glared at him "So? Suzune what did these defects do to him to make him stop babysitting this class?"

He already knew the reason since he overheard it before he entered, he just wanted to torment her more.

'Babysitting? So Ryuuken-kun already knew that Ayanokouji-kun was really the mastermind of this class.' Stalker-chan thought.

".... So when did you know?"

"Know what?.... Him being the real mastermind of this class? Do you remember when I was harassing your class before winter break? He was the one who confronted me."

'Mastermind?' most of the defectives thought.

"HA HA HA, just like I thought Ayanokouji-boy was involved in your sudden step down as the leader of your class, Dragon-boii. I guess these monkeys will never understand these kind of things." Koenji said, mocking the rest of his classmates.

"Koenji you bastard, I told you to stop calling me with that shitty nickname."

Koenji just smirked at Dragon-boii.

'So aside from the achievements of this class he was also the one who made Ryuuken-kun step down as Class-C's leader huh? Ayanokouji-kun was really amazing.' Matsushita thought as she was amazed by what Ayanokouji had done for this class.

'He didn't disclose my involvement with that incident. Well not that it matters anymore, I've already move on from my past, even if he revealed it I will accept the criticism of my classmates, I won't care even if they will hate me more since I found some people who I already considered real friends in this school.' Karuizawa thought as she was somewhat relieved that she won't deal with some troublesome stuff if Ryuuken revealed her involvement.

"R-rr-ryuuen-dono, don't tell me, A-ayanokouji-dono is like the phantom leader of this class." said Professor or also known as Sotomura. He was stuttering because he was scared of Ryuuken and Albert. But he really wanted to know if he's weeb like deductions were correct.

'Phantom leader? what a weeb'

"Kukuku, looks like this weeb came to that conclusion by reading too much manga and watching too much anime. But that conclusion of yours is correct Weeb-kun."

"So my deduction was correct! That's why he also had the protagonist seat!" He exclaimed as his eyes glittered in excitement.

"NO WAY! There's no way that's true! Right Horikita-san?" Shinohara asked in disbelief. "That guy didn't even contributed anything in this class!"

"There's no way that the gloomy guy of this class would be much greater than me!" Miyamoto added.

'I think I should stop being friends with Shinohara-san after this, she's really making fun of herself right now. I think even Maya-chan thought of the same thing' Matsushita thought as she sighed internally.

"Of course Ayanokouji-san, would be greater than any of you in this class. Right Albert?"

"YESS, BRO IS GREATER THAN THEM!" Albert said in English which only a few of them understood.

"HA HA HA, a perfect existence like me would be better or equal to Ayanokouji-boy."

'Narcissist'

"Can you please shut-up even for a moment Miyamoto-kun and Shinohara-san!"

"Wait why Hirat-"

"I don't mean to be rude Shinohara-san but can you use your head even a little?" Hasebe interjected with a harsh statement to silence her. "Why don't you calm down and think about it and be logical to why specifically HIM, Kiyopon was targeted."

"....."

'Now she felt silent with Hasebe-san's words did she finally used her brain instead of her mouth?'

"Yeah that's right Kiyotaka would never even abandon this class if you didn't betrayed him first. You sold him for some points, so what right do you have to call him a traitor?" Miyake added.

"I agree with them Shinohara-san, Miyamoto-kun and the rest of you who suspected Ayanokouji-kun as a traitor, you didn't even think on why he was targeted and why Ryuen-kun thought highly of him." Hirata said which made most of his classmate silent.

Everyone was surprised by Hirata's sudden statement defending Ayanokouji.

'Looks like he really did something with Hirata-kun just like I thought from earlier..... HOLY SHIT CHIAKI!! Stop thinking about something unnecessary in a serious time like this!' Matsushita thought, she's really a... 'Shut up Author-san I'm not a pervert.' .....

"Wait Ishizaki, why are you referring Ayanokouji with honorifics?" Sudou asked curiously, while the other guys also wondered.

"Huh? Why not? He deserved our respect, right Albert?"

'Respect? That gloomy guy?' Miyamoto and Ijuin thought

"YES!"

"Kukuku, you see Albert and Ishizaki here really respected that monster, I think you lot should refrain insulting him or else Albert

would beat you up." Ryuuken said as most of the guys flinched and were also surprised that the big guy respected Ayanokouji. Ryuuken then faced Horikita and asked "Why not tell them about it Suzune. About who's really behind the achievements of this class and you're just a puppet leader who gains the credit of that Monster's work."

"....."

"Silence means Yes?" He asked "See? Your great puppet leader didn't even deny what I said."

"Stop calling her a puppet!" Sudou exclaimed "Suzune is what Ryuuken claimed the truth, about Ayanokouji?"

".....Yeah." Horikita answered in a meek voice just like Sakura.

"There you have it!! Kukuku. I don't see Kikyuu here, so my guess was right that she was expelled. To think that he also removed the time bomb of this class before leaving. You received a nice gift Suzune." Ryuuken said, as he planned to leave and proceed to Class-A's room "I think we're done here, let's go Ishizaki and Albert."

"Wait! where are you going?"

"I'm now satisfied tormenting your class, and besides I need to find out why that Loli gave me a protection point."

"I'm coming with you!"

"Wait Suzune! You need to explain the truth! Don't leave us hanging here!" Sudou exclaimed

"We need an explanation on how and why Kiyotaka was the so called mastermind" Yukimura said, he already knew some of it but he wants it to come from Horikita's mouth.

"Yeah! And what does he mean Kikyuu-chan being a time bomb?" Ike asked

"That's right, Horikita-san I don't think I can fully answer their questions." Hirata added

"Yeah you should stay here and explain Horikita-san. Me and Maya-chan will go there to question Ayanokouji-kun, and will report what we information we could get there." Matsushita requested.

"Ehh?" Satou was surprised but she had gone along with Matsushita's request as she was also curious on her love interest sudden actions. "...Right, I'll go with Chiaki-chan, I'm quite curious on why he suddenly transferred classes."

"Wh-"

"Then you can go now as Horikita-san will explain the details here." Hirata interjected as he sensed that currently Horikita was becoming more and more stubborn.

I'm currently processing my thoughts with my superior brain, as I explain Ayanokouji-kun's achievements in this class.

.

.

Why am I even in this predicament!

I need to get my brother's acknowledgement before he graduate.

.

.

That guy, why did he suddenly transferred classes?

Is there no other way in his situation for him to remain in my class and continue helping me?

Why didn't he told me.

If he's gone I think there would be no future in this class, and how did he even have the points to transfer classes, was he really colluding with Sakayanagi-san from the start?

Kushida as time bomb? What is Ryuen-kun even talking about?

The both of us made an agreement to have a ceasefire after that bet on the paper shuffle exam.

Why did Ayanokouji-kun expelled her! I promised to myself that I would changed her and make her more useful in for this class!

What the heck has he done?!

I said that I will cooperate with him and now he's leaving me?!

Also, what the heck am I doing!

.

.

.

I need to take him back on my class!

Gather the points and get him back!

***To be Continued.....***



-chan ftw



## Chapter 16: Interrogation gone wrong, again?

### *Kiyotaka POV*

I messaged Kei and asked for some information on what's currently the situation on my former class, she replied that Ryuuen was currently there.

I think currently Horikita is under in a lot of pressure right now, since I didn't talked to her about anything in my sudden transfer.

Judging from my recent interactions with her, she really looked like she was in a rush. I pondered about it and came to the conclusion that it was something about her brother, since he's a graduating student leaving the school this month.

Affection? Approval? Acknowledgement?

She wants it because she's been longing for it for a long time, and she can't accept the fact that I've been acknowledged by his beloved brother instead of her.

She wanted to fix their awkward relationship as siblings.

She has the potential to grow as a great leader just like what her brother thought, that is....

....If she can overcome her superior tendencies.

Change was never easy.

Even for a Masterpiece as they deemed me, I still struggle in the change that I wanted for myself.

When a person has a high opinion of themselves, this can be detrimental to relationships. This attitude can turn people off and actually cause the loss of trust.

Ironically, a person with a superiority complex will never admit that they are the reason that the trust they've built up disappear.

Horikita, you were already in the process of changing, but with my actions....

...My sudden transfer of classes, Kushida's expulsion, and you rushing things with your brother...

....with all of these circumstances that you have to deal with right

now as a leader, will you get over by your defect?

Or will you revert back to the old Horikita?

If it's the latter then not only I would be disappointed, but also your brother.

I already made an insurance if that happened that's why I talked and fixed Hirata two days ago.

.

..

...

Let me see how much you've grown, Horikita.

I sent a message to Kei, Hirata and the Ayanokouji group, and put back my phone in my pocket.

I looked up and saw the beautiful girl currently standing in front of me, she was currently flustered due to the teasing that the class did to her and of course I'm mainly part of it.

"So Detective-chan, what do you want to ask?" I asked "But before that why don't you take a seat first? You can sit on Totsuka's former seat so that you can ask me more directly."

"Uhhh? ... Yeah." She meekly replied as she complied and sat down.

### **3rd Person POV**

After complying with Ayanokouji, Nishikawa sat down and....

'AGGGHHH! This guy saying all of those embarrassing things with a straight face! You need to calm yourself down Ryouko!'

*\*Bam!*

*She slapped both of her cheeks loud enough for the whole class to hear.*

'YOSH! Let's get started!'

"Ehh, Didn't know that you're an M?" Ayanokouji asked teasingly in his usual monotone voice as the class burst in laughter.

"AYANOKOUJI-KUN HOW DID YOU EVEN CAME TO THAT CONCLUSION?!! I just did that to regain my composure!"

"But you didn't deny my claim."

"HAHAHA. Stop it King we won't be able to get anywhere if you continue this RomCom skit of yours, right Hime?"

"Fufufu, I don't mind though, I can watch this cute little interactions of theirs since it's amusing, isn't that right Masumi-san?"

"Well I also don't mind, so you're an 'M' Nishikawa?" Kamuro asked as she smirked.

"Well I mind!" Nishikawa retorted "I just regained my composure and now it's gone again!"

'He's really hard to deal with.' She thought

"Ryouko-chan you didn't answer their question if you're an M." Nishi added as the class laughed again.

"NO I'M NOT! And why am I the one being questioned here?!" she exclaimed as she felt embarrassed after shouting.

Katsuragi sighed "I think you should stop this behavior right now, since we will lose some points."

"Now now Katsuragi I think it's fine since it's like a welcome for the special mastermind who defeated you in that class." Hashimoto replied.

"You..... I think I should start it first, so Ayanokouji how did your former class win the island exam?"

'Ahhh and now it was Katsuragi-kun who started it instead of me.' Nishikawa thought as she sighed in a disappointed way.

"I think I will let Detective-chan go first as an apology since I've been teasing her too much. So Detective-chan what do you want to ask?"

Hearing this, the disappointed look from Nishikawa's face disappeared as she was back to her usual self. She then turned around to look at Ayanokouji as her eyes were glittering with excitement.

'I think I should ask about the island exam later so that I would be the one who gains the control of the questioning.' she thought

"You said in your introduction earlier that you're confident in your Academic and Physical abilities but from what I observed based from the results of the exams, you were rated average from everything be it Academically or Physically. Except from the fact that you ran fast with the former SCP. This just concludes that you were holding back right? And if you really did, to what extent?"

Everyone was surprised by Nishikawa's deduction aside from Sakayanagi who knew just how capable Nishikawa was.

Nishikawa just didn't really cared about being a leader or the class affairs in general since she was most interested in things that can fill her curiosity and this time that curiosity led to Ayanokouji Kiyotaka...

"Aside from my teasing earlier, you really are worthy being called 'Detective-chan'."

"Thank you?" she replied as she tilt her head "So your answer, suspect Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun?"

"Now you're even calling him a 'suspect' did the genre of your

little skit got changed again?" Hashimoto teased as most of their classmates laughed again.

"I'm just playing along with him." she replied but she didn't get flustered as she was from before, because she was now in her so called 'serious mode'.

"To answer your question, yes I'm holding back. And the extent? I could rank higher than Arisu." Ayanokouji replied which made his new classmates have some looks of disbelief.

"Fufufufu. It seems like some of our classmates didn't believed you Kiyotaka-kun." Sakayanagi said then faced her other classmates "What he said was true."

"Ehh No way!" most of her classmates thought as their class leader who ranked first in academics admitted that her childhood friend was better than her.

"You can verify it at the start of our second year, since the final academic examination was already over. Or perhaps if the next and last special exam we would have, would be academically related you can see if what I claimed was the truth." Sakayanagi added with her usual smug smile.

Katsuragi then stood up and asked "But why would you hold back to that extent?"

"I didn't want to stand out."

".....Is that all?"

"Yeah, and besides tutoring someone is a troublesome task, but don't worry just like I promised Arisu from helping me transfer here, I won't hold back this time."

"Other reasons?" Nishikawa asked, as if she's not content with his answer.

"Hmm? That's all."

"Then from what I heard from Mii-chan that Sudou-kun was supposedly expelled from an exam, all I can think of was link it to you since from what I've heard from Mii-chan before that incident, the usual Horikita-san would never save someone since most of your classmates especially Karuizawa-san's group called her an 'Ice Cold-Bitch'. I want all the other details, suspect Ayanokouji-kun."

"To think that Kei's girl group would have a nickname like that to Horikita. Aside from that Nishikawa Ryouko huh? She's really sharp, to think that she could come up with these deductions easily, she also easily lead the conversation from my Academic capabilities to the Midterm exams, and she's close to Mii-chan from which I could tell that she also had some kind of social network. Since from my past interaction with Mii-chan, she was a shy girl to think that she would open up on a student from Class-A and blurt some information regarding class affairs.'

"I guess it's fine to tell some details..."

"I said 'ALL', suspect Ayanokouji-kun. Since you've been teasing me earlier, think of it as payback." Nishikawa said as she had a wide grin on her face.

'She's really enjoying this.' Kamuro and most of her female classmates thought.

'How enviable.' Shimuzu thought, a boy who confessed his love for Nishikawa, but got rejected.

'What a stubborn girl, If I remember correctly she was with the same group with Horikita during the Zodiac Exam back in the cruise ship, probably the other members of Class-A's dragon group were as sharp and clever as her? To think that there are some who are above the level of Katsuragi, did they just played along with his leadership from before, or was it an order from Arisu?.... So these were the students of Class-A huh? It's really different from my former class.'

"It seems like Sudou that time didn't memorize the old midterm exam that I brought from an upperclassman."

"Huh?! You brought what?" Katsuragi asked as most of their classmates were shocked on what he had done.

"King, You brought old exams?"

'Isn't that some form of cheating?' some of their classmates thought.

"Continue suspect, Ayanokouji-kun." Nishikawa said as she knew that it wasn't the whole story, ignoring the question of the two boys.

'Fufufu, to think that this thing really turned into some sort of interrogation, nicely done Detective-chan.'

"If you thought that it was some sort of cheating, you're wrong about that since our teacher announced it in an unusual manner. She announced it as if there was a surefire manner for the likes of the three idiots of our class to pass the exam. Also if I get full marks back then the average of our class would increase, which would lead to Sudou needing 4 points at most if you calculated the average, which would be equivalent to 400K private points." A half lie statement, since he always aimed to be an average student that time. He always just planned to manipulate his score if a time comes where his class average began to rise.

"What does that-"

"You previously said that you brought the old test papers, so that time you saved him, you also brought test scores to nullify his expulsion right, suspect Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Yes Yes, Detective-chan."

"Fufufu, as expected to think that you already knew some sort of

hidden secrets in the S-system that early."

"Wait! You can do that?"

"Aside from that, you mean to say 1 point was equivalent to 100k points?" Nishi asked.

"Yeah. Our financial status back then was kind of poor, since we got zero points on the 1st of May and most of my former classmates spent their points without realizing the hints given by our teacher. I think the only ones back then who saved at least 70k+ was me and Horikita, so we split up the payment and bought 1 point from our teacher to save Sudou."

"That's expensive."

"Since expulsion can be prevented, it's just natural for it to be expensive." Nishikawa replied.

"Then Kiyo knowing you, you just probably let the credit go to Horikita?"

"Yeah Masumi, like I said from before I didn't want to stand out."

"Fufufu, so that's why the Red-Head-kun was in love with their puppet leader, to think that you're primarily the reason for that."

\*BAM Ryuen opened the door, slamming it to make his grand entrance, *AGAIN*.

"Kukuku. To think that the Monster was also a love cupid. H-o-w--C-u-t-e." He said sarcastically

"Fufufu. You're late Dragon-boii."

*To be Continued.....*



-chan ftw?



♀-chan ?

**GENSHIN PLAYERS WHO PLANS TO PULL ON YAE'S BANNER  
TOMORROW, GOODLUCK!!**

## Chapter 17: Blame time?

### **3rd PERSON POV**

Horikita was now finishing up explaining how Ayanokouji saved Sudou who was supposed to be expelled from before.

Almost everyone was amazed by what Ayanokouji have done be it the buying the old exam papers and buying a point to save Sudou.

That's why most of them regretted their actions that they planned to expel him and that they were easily bribed by an unknown individual. They were really ashamed by their actions.

"Before I continue to Kushida-san's betrayal and the other things that would be revealed. Sudou-kun I'll ask you first, tell me why didn't you tell me about that message?" Horikita asked she glared at him intently.

'Didn't Sudou-kun trusted me' She thought 'I thought I already tamed him properly.'

"....." Sudou remained silent at Horikita's question, he can't possibly say that he was scared of the threat of being targeted next.

"And here I thought that you've changed, you're one of the people here that I've trusted the most. So why didn't you tell me, we can possibly prevent him from transferring classes?!"

Sudou became somewhat conflicted after he heard what Horikita said, as he was surprised that he was trusted by his crush. But at the same time he felt guilty that he didn't told her, and most of all he was guilty that the one he betrayed was actually the one who saved him multiple times.

At some point he got scared that he will be targeted again just like what happened with Ryuen's schemes from before, he thought that he can't possibly cause more trouble for Horikita, that's why he didn't tell her.

'Here I thought that I would not make more trouble for Suzune.' Sudou thought as he lowered his head in shame. 'Damn it, I didn't change at all, to think that I was jealous at some point when she always sided with him, so it's not love or affection from Suzune. It's just that he was always leading the class from behind the scenes, that's why I always felt that she always valued him better than anyone in this class.'

As most of their classmates were in regret that they planned to

expel the class real mastermind. Of course there were still some students who didn't want to recognize Ayanokouji.

'As if I will recognize that gloomy guy/bastard.' They thought.

Was it pride? greed? or envy?

"Just how high do you value him Horikita-san! It's just that he saved Sudou, everyone can do that!" Miyamoto exclaimed.

And one of those was Miyamoto, he didn't want to recognize Ayanokouji, because as he always thought that he was above that so called 'gloomy guy' of this class.

"Can you shut up already Miyamoto! How can you be naive and dumb at the same time?!" Miyake retorted. "Did you do anything that time to save Sudou? Did you think of the possibility of buying test points or the past exams?! It was all Kiyotaka who had done that, and besides Horikita-san was not done explaining her side, so shut up and just listen."

'As expected of the former delinquent-kun. Good job.' Hasebe thought as she gave a thumbs up to Miyake.

"Yeah just shut up there Male Monkey-kun, Miyake-boy was right you're ruining the revelation of the mastermind, another perfect existence just like me." Koenji added.

He already knew most of what Ayanokouji had done, he was just sarcastically waiting for his classmates pitiful reactions after everything was revealed here.

"That's right, why just don't you listen silently there. What did you even contributed in this class?" Yukimura asked, Miyamoto flinched and just sat down quietly without answering his question.

"Also, who's the one who told him about the threat that he was into?" Horikita asked "There would be someone here among the 33 who received the message who told him that he was targeted. So who was it?"

Nobody answered her question, Horikita deducted that there was no way that Ayanokouji would just suddenly know that he would be targeted if there was no one told him about it.

"..... It was you right.... Karuizawa-san?"

Everyone was surprised with Horikita's claim that the popular gyaru would helped Ayanokouji, as most of them knew that they were not seemed closed enough for Karuizawa to do it.

"So? What will you do if I was the one?" Karuizawa answered.

"Wait there's no way Karuizawa-san would help that gloomy bastard." Okitani said

"If she really did, then why?! We would have received 500K points in total if he was expelled." Shinohara added, Injuin was trying to butt in but....

Hearing this greedy statement of Shinohara most of their



classmates glared at her.

'Was she really thinking of points right now? Doesn't she realized the predicament we're in and the mistake we made kicking someone who could lead us to Class-A?' Most of them thought.

"Seriously Shinohara-san?!!" Karuizawa exclaimed after hearing one of her so called friend said that selfish thing.

"Staying defective till the bitter end huh?" Koenji muttered as he combed his hair.

"You bastard and you bitch! You were really trying to sell Kiyotaka for some points even after what Horikita-san said that he's the mastermind of this class." Miyake exclaimed angrily at their shitty behavior.

'Greedy bitch, tch.' Miyake and Hasebe thought

"I don't care anymore, I'm glad that Kiyopon transferred classes." Hasebe said as she walk out of the room where Miyake and Sakurair followed.

Horikita wants to stop them from leaving but Hirata looked at her and shook his head saying she should just let them leave.

Yukimura remained at his seat, as he wants more information, even after he already heard some of it from Ayanokouji himself, he wants confirmation from the so called 'Puppet leader' claimed by Ryuen.

"Now even I was really disgusted after you showed your true colors Shinohara-san and Okitani-kun. How greedy can you be to sacrifice one of our classmates for some points even after knowing some of what Ayanokouji-kun had accomplished in this class." As Hirata said this most of his classmates especially most of the girls thought the same.

'This is why I hate normies.' The Professor thought. 'They're interrupting the good parts, I'm currently enjoying this event as it was like an anime where the MC was Ayanokouji-dono and how he successfully manipulated this class.'

'I won't be surprised if Sakayanagi-san's next target would be these idiots.' Karuizawa and Yukimura thought as they sighed heavily.

Feeling the glares of most of their classmates as if saying that they really should just shut up already, they quietly sat down on their seats as their heads were held down ashamed by their actions.

### ***Karuizawa POV***

So it was as Kiyotaka expected that it would come up to this, that's why he gave me the insurance earlier to tell some of the details that even Horikita-san didn't knew.

From what I can perceive Horikita-san was somewhat becoming mature unlike our first impressions with her from the start of school

the same goes for me and some of my classmates.

But with the actions he made our class was on a total chaos right now.

"Yes Horikita-san I am the one who told him, because why not? I knew some of his exploits from behind the scenes that even you didn't knew, and besides does it really matter now?." I asked and looked.

"Then why didn't you tell me or Hirata-kun about it?!" she asked in a somewhat angry tone.

"My my to think that Horikita-girl would be this affected with Ayanokouji-boy leaving the class. For you to resort to blaming and faulting your own classmates with your own incompetence. Did you lose hope that your ticket to Class-A left or rather...." He stopped and stood up as if realizing something "..... HA HA HA so that's how it is. Now I suddenly lose interest with this discussion, you disappoint me Horikita-girl." and with that Koenji also left the classroom.

I felt that Sudou-kun became irritated by Koenji's statement but he refrained himself from lashing out.

"I just complied with his request that I shouldn't tell you about it, since he was worried that I would be targeted next." I said in a somewhat remorseful expression. "And I'm also surprised on what he did this time, that he was able to transfer classes which he didn't told me anything about it, unlike from what we had done from behind the scenes before."

A half lie, Kiyotaka already had a plan in motion against Nagumo-senpai, so I don't need to worry about being targeted even if I tell it here, just like what he instructed.

""WE?"" some of my classmates muttered.

"Yeah he sometimes asks me to work with him for the sake of the class."

Hearing this their look of regret for trying to expel him became more apparent since they heard that it was him again working for the sake of the class.

And by including myself, if an exam like this would be implemented again, they would have doubts kicking me out if I would be targeted next time. Since some of Kiyotaka's exploits where I was involved would be revealed.

"One of it was something serious that could be labeled as a crime, the prevention of 'Operation Delta'."

"Operation Delta?" Horikita-san asked where I could feel that the involved in this plan flinched.

I came closer to Horikita-san and whispered what it meant.

"Seriously?!" she glared at their direction she didn't mentioned

the names of Sudou-kun and Ike-kun since she knows that they are still useful for the class especially Sudou-kun. While my other classmates were curious on what I just whispered to her.

"What was that Operation about Karuizawa-san?" Mii-chan asked.

"I think it should be better if you don't know anything about it Mii-chan and the rest of you, it is something that would fracture the class more than it currently is." I replied "I will give you the evidence later Horikita-san, and to the ones involved in it I already had a reserved copy of it and someone trustful with the girls side, so don't you dare try and do something funny with us."

"So this is one the reasons that Hirata-kun regards Ayanokouji-kun as the most dependable classmate. He really cared for our class without most of us knowing it."

But Kiyotaka didn't really cared for our class, the only thing Kiyotaka cared about was his peaceful life-chan, ice cream-chan, .....and me? Hehehe.

Just kidding.... Now I'm kind of sad after that. MOOOU!!

"Yeah Mii-chan, he was also the one who helped me somewhat overcome this exam without breaking down just before the exam began. And I'm really thankful to Ayanokouji-kun for that. Hehe." Hirata-kun replied as he lightly pokes his cheek with a blush....EHHH...Don't tell me he...

Hearing these statements from Mii-chan and Hirata-kun their evaluation of Kiyotaka rose up again.

"Horikita-san, I think we should just continue the discussion from earlier and I think it would be better for our class to move on. I'm also sad by the fact that Ayanokouji-kun, who was someone important had gone to another class and the other two were expelled, the important thing for us right now is we should do what we can and fight alongside who were left here. I'm sure most of us has learned our lesson after this."

"Yeah, Hirata-kun was right, and even if you planned to gather some points from our class to take him back, do you think he would comply after the betrayal that our class had done?" With my question Horikita-san flinched, so she was really thinking about doing something like that.

"...." She stayed silent for a while. "...I'm sorry for my behavior from earlier, I think what Koenji-kun, Hirata-kun and Karuizawa-san said was right, I was really selfish and incompetent." She apologized as she bowed her head.

"No Suzune, we were the one who was supposed to be sorry." Sudou-kun said.

"Ken was right, as I was envious from Ayanokouji's exploits that were revealed now. I'm really ashamed that because of our greed

we caused you and him a lot of trouble. We're sorry for that." Ike added.

With that most of our classmates apologized and the atmosphere in the class lightened a bit, of course this gave rise to people who still didn't want to recognize Kiyotaka's exploits and some were unsatisfied with Horikita-san's leadership.

I guess it's better than the atmosphere from before.

Even for a puppet leader as Ryuen deemed her, her influence in the class was still visible. It seems like she won't revert back to the old Horikita-san.

And the class was still under her leadership since I suggested it as Hirata-kun backed me up.

*ALL ACCORDING TO HIS PLAN.*

I'm not really surprised since I knew how amazing he was, he still somewhat saved the class who betrayed him.

Though as he said it was still up to Horikita-san if it will crumble.

If she really did he already planned to make Hirata-kun lead this class.

I don't really care aiming for Class-A. I'll just treasure my time here with my friends and successfully graduate with them.

I'm really sad that Kiyotaka left our class, but if he can find the peaceful life he always seeks in Sakayanagi-san's class, I guess I'm fine with that.....

I'm happy for him from the bottom of my heart.

*To be Continued.....*

---

**NEXT CHAPTER WOULD BE THE LAST FOR THIS ARC.**

**THANKS FOR 20K** 🍷🍷🍷

## Chapter 18: Interrogation got interrupted

**SATOU MAYA POV - (HER NEW ILLUSTRATION FOR Y2 V6 WAS KIND OF HOT)**

Right now we're eavesdropping.

Yep, you heard that right, we're eavesdropping.

I'm with Chiaki-chan together with an unexpected bunch.

The tyrant leader Ryuuken-kun, the big-kind-of-scary-man Yamada-kun, and....

.....a guy named Ishizaki-kun, I can't think of anything to describe him, it would be rude to call him an idiot just because he looks like one because I never really interacted with him.

I don't know why did I agree to come here with them since I'm kind of scared of Ryuuken-kun and Yamada-kun.

Was it because Chiaki-chan was the one who invited me?

Or just the curiosity about the boy who I liked and rejected me?

Thinking about that Christmas day, makes me sad....

....

Anyways ever since we came here, after hearing the things that we could hear from the other side of the door, all I can say was.....

.....Amazing!!!

Ayanokouji-kun was really AMAZING!!!

**(CTTO: FROM REDDIT)**

'WHAT THE HELL AUTHOR-SAN!!!

GRRR!!

You're being too mean to me!!'

Pfft...

Oii! Don't laugh at me!

Why did they just assume that I just fell in love with him when he ran against the former SCP.

Him running fast that day when he raced against the former SCP was just the final push for me to finally approach and make my move on him.

I already evaluated him highly before then as I just lack the courage. He's not a pervert just like the boys who were in our class. His calm, mysterious, and mature demeanor was really charming for me.

His good looking face, and his super hot, well built.... yummy body which I saw during swimming classes.

Oww shit I think I'm getting off-tracks here.

**Pervert.**

Shut up Author-san!

Now that I think of it, the first time when I really saw him acted mature was due to my childish antics.

It was when I suggested to bully Horikita-san.

If I remember correctly he just acted neutral to our childish behavior back then.

He didn't tried to stop nor support us.

He just warned us of the consequences, if we really bullied her back then I think we would be expelled if the school founds out. So I'm glad that time that he warned us.

The one who questions him right now was.... if I'm not mistaken her name was Nishikawa Ryouko-san and it really sounds like she's enjoying it.

It looks like they are addressing each other with silly nicknames, Detective-chan and suspect.....

.....Arrghhhh. I'm jealous!!

As I was out of my own thoughts, Ryuen-kun slammed the door and entered the room.

"Kukuku. To think that the Monster was also a love cupid. H-o-w--C-u-t-e." Ryuen-kun said with a wide grin on his face.

Scary!

"Fufufu. You're late Dragon-boii." Sakayanagi-san replied with a light smile, it seems like she anticipated Ryuen-kun's arrival.

Why does Sakayanagi-san and Koenji-kun call him Dragon-boii?

"Shut up Loli, Tsk. It seems like you're having an interesting discussion here. So? Why did you gave me the protection point?"

So he really wasn't lying when he said that he got the protection point.

"Ryuen, what are you doing here?" Katsuragi-kun asked "And what do you mean you got a protection point? Didn't your class wanted to kick you out?"

"Oh Johnny it looks like you're still here, and your one and only goon was the one expelled. Kukuku, what was his name again? Totsu-shi-? Totsu-gone? Ahh that's right Totsuka."

"You... Tsk.... You acting high and mighty again.... Did you get

back your position as the leader again?"

"Kukuku. Who knows." He then faced Sakayanagi-san and said "I want an explanation from both the Monster and this Loli, on why they did helped me out."

I'm meaning to ask this since earlier, why does he calls Ayanokouji-kun a Monster?

"Before I explain Dragon-boii." she then faced both me and Chiaki-chan. "Fufufu. It seems like you have some visitors Kiyotaka-kun."

"Satou and Stalker-chan..." Ayanokouji-kun said as he looked at us.

"Stalker-chan?" I muttered curiously and looked at my friend besides me "Ehh Chiaki-chan is he perhaps talking about you being a stalker, did you perhaps stalked him?"

".... NO! I'm just following him back then out of curiosity."

"Ehh, is that really all?" I teased.

"Ahh that's right I'd like you to meet one of your kin, this is Stalker-kun." Ayanokouji-kun said as he pointed at Hashimoto-kun.

**(HASHIMOTO X CHIAKI???)**

"Ehhh? It looks like you noticed me back then." Hashimoto-kun replied "Since when?"

"From the beginning." Ayanokouji-kun answered

"Seriously?" as Ayanokouji-kun nodded with his usual blank face. How cool.

"I bet Kiyo also had evidence that you stalked him." Kamuro-san said, must be nice being close to him to call him with a nickname. Ughhhh I'm being jealous again. "When this Loli asked me to stalk him, he had photos of the days when I followed him."

"No way. Seriously you even had photos of me following you?" Hashimoto-kun asked as Ayanokouji-kun nodded.

"See?!" Chiaki-chan exclaimed "I'm not the only one who stalked him. And besides I'm good at tailing people, I'm really surprised back then that he even got photos of me following him every single time."

"I guess you're really good at tailing people Stalker-chan maybe above or the same level as Stalker-kun, and Masumi was kind of novice at it."

I looked beside me after Ayanokouji-kun said that....

Why does Chiaki-chan looks so proud and happy being told that she's a good stalker?

"So what does the former classmates of our Kiyotaka-kun wants from him?"

"...Uhhh if it's alright we would like to join in your current discussion and besides we want to know why he suddenly

transferred classes." Chiaki-chan said.

"That's right, we wanted to know more about Kiyotaka-kun, the one who lead us from behind the scenes." I replied.

"Yeah, and knowing some of his past exploits I thought he would do something different aside from switching classes. I think there's more to it." Chiaki-chan added, so she really knew something even before, I'll ask later. hehehe

With my reply I felt the glares of the other girls in the room.

'Why is she acting friendly towards him now? Wasn't she one of those who betrayed him?' I think this is what they thought of me.

It was a bold move from me calling him his first name. I still feel embarrassed after saying it.

I still like him even before his sudden transfer of classes, even after he rejected me.

Am I dumb that I can't move on from liking him?

I don't know, because I still like him! And that's the only reason I need right now.

I won't give up now. I think he would be more popular in the upcoming days, that's why I did it, and will probably act more aggressive towards him in the future.

"Fufufu." she then and looked towards Ayanokouji-kun asking for approval.

"I guess it's fine, Stalker-chan was one of the people who told me about that message and besides I think Maya was one of the people who casted their praise votes on me that's why I got so many even after just transferring here."

I feel my face heating up after he called me my first name.

This is approval right, that I can use his first name? He called me by my first name.

Yosh! So from now on I will call him Kiyotaka-kun.

BJ Maya! NO NO NO.

What I meant there was GJ as in good job.

**Pervert.**

I'm not!!

And he also knew that I casted a praise vote on him. And Chiaki-chan told him.... wait 'one of the people' does that mean there's more?

"And who might that be the other people who told you?" Chiaki-chan asked as she also noticed Kiyotaka-kun's words.

"You can find out in your class later. I bet Horikita already pinpointed that person."

If I had to guess it would be Karuizawa-san, ever since the day that he broke up with Hirata-kun, I always thought it was because she had feelings with Ayan-- Kiyotaka-kun.



Her glances towards him when we were chatting were the same as mine, and their unusual closeness when we had that double date.

"Enough of that crap! So? Why did the both of you helped me?" Ryuen-kun asked irritably.

"Fufufu. It seems like Dragon-boii lost his patience."

"As for Class-B's cooperation, I didn't do anything grand I just helped both parties on what they wanted and acted like a middleman. And it was Arisu's own idea to give you the protection point ever since she learned that you will be saved in the exam after I told her last night that Class-B would help you."

"Fufufu, Kiyotaka-kun was right. It would be boring if you got suddenly expelled in the next exam after you've been saved today, that's why I made an insurance to help you reach our second year. Besides after Kiyotaka-kun left his former class, the competitions would become boring. And Ichinose-san got really nerfed by Kinugasa Shougo-san himself after the Zodiac exam. She would be boring to compete with. FUFUFUFU."

Kinugasa? Who's that? Is that person related to Ichinose-san? But that statement about her being boring was kind of harsh.

"You dammed Loli, I will make you eat your own words and will never lose the protection point until graduation. Kukuku. Although I really agree with your last statement about Ichinose. KUKUKU."

Most of Sakayanagi-san's classmates are curious on who that person is.

"Fufufu. Let's see Dragon-boii."

"Even after the both of you teamed up I will crush the both of you." and then he faced Kiyotaka-kun and asked. "It seems like you had a final gift from that defective class and got rid of Kikyuu huh?"

"What do you mean? I got falsely accused of rape, a thing I didn't do."

"Rape?" "Accused" "Kikyuu you mean Kushida-chan? What happ--?" before they could continue their questions was interjected by Sakayanagi-san.

"Fufufu. Don't interrupt their discussion for now, just listen and you will have your answers."

"Don't play dumb Monster what's the real reason?" Ryuen-kun asked as Kiyotaka-kun sighed.

"Both Horikita and I tried to convince her ever since we learned about her true nature, but it was all worthless even though they already had an agreement after the Paper Shuffle exam, she will continue to be a threat and will continue to plot expulsion against Horikita."

"Kukuku. What a great babysitter don't you agree, Sakayanagi?"

"Fufufufu, I can agree with that Ryuen-kun."

"She didn't know that I had an evidence that time when she accused me." He then grabbed his phone from his pocket and played a recording.....

Silence befell the room as we heard the recording, she really sounds so different in there, unlike the friendly Kushida-san we all knew.

"She thought that she had the upper hand against me and think that I was dancing in the palm of her hand. In fact she was dancing in mine."

"KUKUKUKUKUKU." Ryuen-kun laughed maniacally "That phrase seems familiar right? Albert, Ishizaki?"

"YES, AS EXPECTED OF BRO."

"What do you mean Ryuen-san?"

"So you were asleep when he said that phrase. Nevermind it seems like Albert heard those words from him while you were lay down on the floor back then... If his enemy thought that they are 5 times steps above him, this monster would be 50 steps above them."

"You really do respect our King here, Ryuen."

"Kukuku. But you're not that surprised aren't you Hashimoto?"

"Of course, since Hime here told us that he was 'X' last night, what I'm surprised is that even the big guy Albert there really respects him."

"Of course, he defeated us all by himself." Ishizaki-kun proudly said.

"What do you mean Ishizaki?"

"Wait. If it's Ryuen it would definitely lead to violence." Katsuragi-kun said "Don't tell me he defeated you through violence which you are so proud of?"

"Ishizaki, you idiot! why do you look so proud that we got defeated by him single handedly?" Ryuen-kun said as he had a sighed of irritation visibly directed at Ishizaki. "That's right Johnny he really defeated us."

"He's not just cunning and smart but also strong?" muttered most of the girls in the room including me. "He's the perfect boyfriend."

"No way... He's that strong? And is this why you call him a monster?" Hashimoto-kun asked.

"Yeah he's not only a monster in that department but he's also a monster in that other department right Hashimoto?"

"Ahhh you mean the T-Rex?" as he said the T-Rex most of the guys in the room laughed.

What was that T-Rex they are talking about?

"KUKUKU, it seems like you're not that surprised Loli."

"Of course Dragon-boii, as his childhood friend it was normal for me to know these small details."

"Ehh they're childhood friends?" Chiaki-chan muttered with a surprised look on her face.

To think that Kiyotaka-kun was friends with Class-A's leader.

"Kukuku, childhood friend huh? It really seems I'm right that you knew that Monster from the very beginning."

AMAZING SO AMAZING.

I'm falling in love with him more and more with these revelations.

"Are you done now? I want to continue interrogating my dear suspect here." Nishikawa said in a somewhat angry tone.

"Fufufu. It seems like we somehow angered our Detective-chan here. Sorry for the interruption Nishikawa-san, you may continue now."

***To be Continued.....***

---

## Chapter 19: 🤖☐♀☐-chan is troublesome but will be useful.....

### *Kiyotaka POV*

"Of course, he defeated us all by himself."

I have a bad feeling about this....

"What do you mean Ishizaki?"

"Wait. If it's Ryuen it would definitely lead to violence.... Don't tell me he defeated you through violence which you are so proud of?"

"Ishizaki, you idiot!" Ryuen-tsun exclaimed. "Why do you look so proud that we got defeated by him single handedly. That's right Johnny he really defeated us."

As he admitted that, most of my new classmates stared at me with mixed feelings, feeling of admiration from most of them, some of the guys flinched from fear as they learned that me of all people defeated Albert.

And the feeling of being seen as something like I'm some sort of ticket for Class-A, which was especially strong from Stalker-kun.

The troublesome girl who sat in front of me was just staring at me blankly, as if processing the information that she just received.

"Oww." I lightly flicked her forehead "What was that for Ayanokouji-kun? ....I mean suspect Ayanokouji-kun."

So she really wanted to keep calling me her suspect. *Sigh*.

"You're staring at me too much and it seems like you're day dreaming or something."

"No No, I'm just thinking about something."

"Hmmm..."

I think this would end up in a troublesome way.

The good side of it is she would be the primary candidate for the next phase of my plan....

### *Detective-chan POV*

I didn't expect that the big guy of Ryuen-kun's class, Yamada-kun also respects my suspect here.

And he beat them in a fight?

ALONE???

OH MY GOD....

I can imagine that he beat Ryuuken-kun back then if they fought 1v1..... But how did he beat 3 strong looking fighters?

Just how OP my suspect Ayanokouji-kun is?

Hmmmm.....

After hearing their little discussion it seems like they don't want to disclose other details other than the fact that my suspect here defeated them.

My classmates seems really impressed by those revelations, I could feel some of the guys flinched when Ryuuken-kun admitted that they were defeated in a fight.

Something's not right....

.....I think there's something more to it, just how did it end up into violence when they confronted each other?

He already said earlier that he didn't want to stand out... So why did he involve himself when Ryuuken-kun was hunting for 'X' back then?

Wasn't it wise and safe for him if he still kept himself hidden?

If that's the case then..... Was there an other party involve?

That's why he confronted Ryuuken-kun?

.....

Someone who knew 'X' back then was involve?

And Ryuuken-kun knows who is it?

Did he used that person to lure my suspect Ayanokouji-kun?

If so, who?

Horikita-san, his former cover from before?

Matsushita-san, here who he said she had informed him?

The other one that Horikita-san pinpointed? Or one of his friends in his former class? It could be a teacher? Or maybe someone from Ryuuken-kun's class, someone....

I'm still lacking some information and I can't come up with a solid conclusion on who are the others that are involve....

"Oww." Suddenly I felt some pain on my forehead. "What was that for Ayanokouji-kun?" ohh I forgot. "I mean suspect Ayanokouji-kun."

"You're staring at me too much and it seems like you're day dreaming or something."

Am I?

I need to choose my words properly or this mischievous guy will tease me again.

"No No, I'm just thinking about something."

"Hmmm..."

*Sigh.* this guy, did he notice that I'm currently digging for more information?

.....

There's also the thing about Kushida-chan.

My instincts to not let my guard down around her was right.

I'm quite surprised about that recording about her other side.

Also my second guess last night about her was right.

That one of them got dirt on each other.

She just falsely accused my suspect here which made me angry when I heard it.

I mean it's normal for people to have an other side that even your closest of friends don't know about, but her trying to expel my suspect here and Horikita-san just because they know something about it was kind of absurd.

It makes me sad that she got expelled and was sent to juvenile since at some point we got along well with Mii-chan and Inogashira-chan.

But I think it's just fair since what she'd done can destroy someone's reputation or life by being labeled as a rapist if it was known by the public.

Mii-chan would probably be sad and hurt by this since she really thought of her as a friend and really admired and adored her.

But most importantly....

Right now....

I sighed irritatedly before I spoke.

"Are you done now? I want to continue interrogating my dear suspect here."

"Fufufu. It seems like we somehow angered our Detective-chan here. Sorry for the interruption Nishikawa-san, you may continue now."

Of course I am angry!

I felt irritated when they came interrupting my interrogation.

I'm the one asking questions here and my role just got snatched by them who just suddenly barged in our classroom.

No use thinking about it since it already happened.

"Ehhem, so-" not again...

"Kukuku. So the Monster already had someone who questions him."

I really hate this!

This guy again?!

I glared at him.

"Doragon-boii-san." I saw his brows furrowed with annoyance as I say his nickname.

I don't know where did he get that name, but it looks like he really disliked it.

**\*ELSEWHERE**

"I will submit your complain to the higher ups--"

"AHCHOOO!!"

"Are you sick, Koenji?"

"No no Sensei-chan, a perfect existence like me would never be sick. Because a perfect existence must have the perfect immune system. HA HA HA. Maybe someone was trying to comprehend just how perfect I am."

"....Is that so?..." *Sigh* "This Narcissist' "....Anyway about the case you filed against Yamad..."

### **\*ANYWAYS BACK TO DETECTIVE-CHAN**

"Could you please stop your sudden interruptions?"

He's surprised that aside from Sakayanagi-san, I of all people blurted that silly nickname out, trying to piss him. I can see that my friends have worried looks on their faces.

"Kukuku. You have an interesting lackey here Loli."

"Don't call me a lackey!"

"Fufufu. it seems like Dragon-boii pissed off our Detective-chan here, it's amusing to see her glare at you Dragon-boii-san. And to clarify things I have no lackey here, they are all my dear classmates."

As she said that last statement of hers, I heard Kamuro-san clicked her tongue with annoyance.

"Kukuku. If you say so... Then continue De-tec-tive-chan."

"Hai hai. Do--ra---gon--boii--chan." I rebutted as slowly as possible and changed the *san* to *chan* to irritate him. But he seemed unfazed now as he just smirked at me. I then faced back at my dear suspect here. "Then, let's continue suspect, Ayanokouji-kun. So for my next question, if I remember correctly you were in the same group as Machida-kun back then in the Zodiac Exam, he reported to Katsuragi-kun that you were the VIP, since it seems like they saw through your trap."

"Yeah!" Machida-kun exclaimed as he stood up on his seat, since he's the one who made the blunder and emailed my suspect name back then. "How did it backfired us?"

"It was a double layered trap." my suspect replied. "The VIP back then was neither me nor Yukimura. It was Karuizawa."

"Huh? How?"

"Explain suspect, Ayanokouji-kun."

Karuizawa-san huh?

She could be the potenti...

No, I think she was really the one since she acts as the girls leader along with Kushida-chan in their class.

Even how smart or strong my suspect is he didn't have the social

pull that Hirata-kun, Kushida-chan, or Karuizawa-san had he can't execute some of his former class accomplishments without being noticed.

He needs someone who can gather information on the girls side or mainly just control them...

Hirata-kun would be conditional even though he was popular with the girls, since my suspect knows that he can't control their class in some exams. Exams like where we are separated by gender, just like the mixed training camp.

It can't be Kushida-chan since both her and my suspect have dirt on each other. And she tried to expel him.

So that just leaves Karuizawa-san....

There was also the time that after summer vacation Mii-chan told us that Karuizawa-san finally calls Hirata-kun by his first name. Mii-chan noticed those small details regarding her crush, she also noticed that her crush's girlfriend, Karuizawa-san was somehow a lot more easier to talk to after summer vacation...

This was something weird from me from the start, that the two of them started dating and yet they still call each other by their last names up until the end of summer vacation. Of course I'm not trying to invade their privacy but I just find it weird...

So the possible trigger again for these developments was my suspect, Ayanokouji-kun again.

Those small little details that I got from being friends and just chatting with them were kind of useful on solving some pieces around my suspect Ayanokouji-kun, Sasuga Ryouko hahahaha..... No No No I don't have to be full of my self, since it's not confirmed. Just be humble Ryouko!! Be humble.

*Sigh.*

He was involved with her secretly...

'So it was her huh?'

But it was still an unusual pair.....

### **KIYOTAKA POV**

"Explain suspect, Ayanokouji-kun."

I complied as currently I'm explaining on how Kei was able to fool them during the Zodiac Exam, that the trouble with Manabe and Kei asking help to Machida that time was just an act which of course a lie I made.

I noticed that Detective-chan was on her own thoughts again trying to figure out something.

She asked me to explain but she's not even listening.

"So it was her huh?" she muttered.

Those who heard her mutter those words would probably think



that it was about the things I explained.

I glanced at Ryuuen and Arisu as they just smirked and smile smugly at me respectively as if they find it amusing.

If Detective-chan really had come to a conclusion that Kei was also involved with my confrontation with Ryuuen, maybe she had more information than what she let on, that even I don't know, due to the fact that she also had a great social pull in our year based from her previous deductions and questions earlier, I can guess that it's not as vast as Kushida but the connections she had in our year would be a great asset if she were an ally.

She would be more useful than Kushida or Kei, aside from her social pull her deduction skills are also amazing.

But it was still within what I expected since I knew that Horikita will also pinpoint Kei and will question her, that's why I gave her the insurance earlier to disclose some of what we had done behind the scenes of course with the exception of our connection with Ryuuen.

The only thing that I need now was to strike a deal with Detective-chan... later. Maybe another spread your legs scene?

"Yeah she was somehow my partner in crime behind the scenes....."

As I explained things regarding my partnership with Kei with the exception of Ryuuen's connection, I locked my eyes Detective-chan as she also looked at me directly.

Then my gaze slowly fell to Ryuuen's direction as she followed, as if sending a message that what she currently guessed right now was correct and it's not something to be discussed in here.

She pondered for around 3 seconds and it seems like she got what I meant. In response her eyes lit up with excitement.

Of course I don't know what she exactly had guessed as of now, but the fact she responded like that was proof that she concluded that there was some sort of connection between Ryuuen, Kei and I.

....

What a troublesome girl.

### ***Detective-chan POV***

Was my guess right?

*[Eye Contact Communication Acquired.]*

Eh? Huh? What?

"Yeah she was somehow my partner in crime behind the scenes....."

*Sigh* As he was explaining her connection with Karuizawa-san he looked at me directly, if it wasn't this kind of discussion I think it would be romantic.....

*To be Continued.....*

---

I hope you got the gist of this chapter and what I'm trying to tell. It's like Kiyo protecting Kei's secret while finding a replacement in his new class.

---



**-chan**



**♀-chan**

**(CREDITS TO THE ARTISTS.)**

How do you like the new cover??



**-chan** being beer-chan

The new girl would be some sort of Illustration for Nishikawa(Author-san preference since nothing is available atm.)

**♀-chan** . (AN-94 from GFL. Artist: NIAC, SAUCE: <https://www.pixiv.net/en/artworks/93908428>)



And Kiyo is the Birb.....

If I had time I will probably edit the previous parts as I found a lot of mistakes due to my rushed writing from before specially for the first parts of the book. Will also edit some parts to make them less cringe and be more descriptive.

Anyways that's all, thanks for reading...

Adios.

## Chapter 20: End of Interrogation and new nicknames??

### *Detective-chan POV*

Was my guess right?

*[Eye Contact Communication Acquired.]*

Eh? Huh? What?

"Yeah she was somehow my partner in crime behind the scenes....."

*Sigh* As he was explaining her connection with Karuizawa-san he looked at me directly, if it wasn't this kind of discussion I think it would be romantic.....

If it was, then I wouldn't mind him staring at me like that....

No No No what are you thinking Ryouko!!!

As he was looking at me intently with his beautiful golden eyes, his eyes suddenly looked at the direction of Ryuuen-kun as I followed his gazed.

I don't know why but I think I knew what he meant by that look.

...

...

So I'm right...

Yooshh!!

My guess was right, another mystery was solved around the presence of my mysterious suspect!!

The bright feeling of excitement was still welling up within me together with the feeling of success after racking up my brain to solve something. Ahhhh what a great feeling.

I unconsciously gave him a salute....

Ehh?

"What was that for Detective-chan?" he asked.

"N-nothing! Ehheemmm, continue Ayanokouji-kun."

"Another change of skit, Nishikawa?" Hashimoto-kun who apparently saw what I did asked, as my classmates giggled in return.

"It looks like the Monster already gained his first soldier in your class, Loli."

"Seems like it. Fufufu."

What am I doing?!

Aghh that was embarrassing...

.....

I felt kind of bad that I didn't really listened to his explanation earlier regarding how he won his group's Zodiac exam. I'll just apologize later and ask him to tell me again, what a selfish girl am I. Hehehe.

He continue his explanation about his connection with Karuizawa-san as he successfully avoided saying something that may lead something to Ryuen-kun.

The only one of my classmates who's not surprised by this was Sakayanagi-san, so maybe she knew it beforehand?

Looking at Ryuen-kun's group they're just nonchalantly listening to him since they already knew the connection between my suspect and Karuizawa-san.

On the other hand the two girls beside them seems really surprised that one of their closest friends and leader of the girls in their class was really working with him behind the scenes.

As he finished up his explanation, it's time for the final part of the interrogation, the well known success of their class, the results of the Deserted Island Examination.

Racking up my brain trying to recall the results....

Let's start!!

"You look excited Detective-chan."

"Ehh? Was it too obvious?" He nodded "I-is that so, then let's start with the questions with the Island Exam, how did your class manage to win with a huge lead that time?"

"Luck I guess?"

"Ooh, luck huh?"

"""" ..... """"

"HAHAHA. don't joke around King, after what you told us earlier you really expect us to believe that?"

"I'm not lying though."

"Fufufu, Let him explain first."

"Fufufu. Yeah I agree with the Chibi-Loli."

"Ara, coming up with a new nickname for me Doragon-boii? Maybe I should just shorten yours and call you Dora-chan? And aren't you being too rude copying my own laugh?"

Dora-chan huh? Now that I look at him, his hairstyle is kinda similar to Dora....

And Ishizaki-kun would be Boots...

Pffftt...

What about Yamada-kun??...

"Oi!! Why are you looking and laughing at me like that, Detective-chan?"

"Eeep." Of course I looked away at him and faced my suspect.  
"No-Nothing, you may continue your explanation now Dora-ch---"

"You bitch."

"No no no Dor- Ryuuken-kun. What I meant there was my suspect, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Now you're including Ryuuken in your little skit." Hashimoto-kun said mockingly as he faced Ryuuken-kun .

"Shut up, you fucking snake!" Ryuuken-kun retorted.

"Pffftt." Kamuro-san giggled.

"It's alright Ryuuken-san, I don't know why but I also felt insulted when that girl looked at our direction, right Albert?" Boo- I mean Ishizaki-kun asked.

"NO." Yamada-kun replied.

"Ehh?"

"Fufufu, it seems like Detective-chan was thinking of something amusing when I shorten your nickname, Do-ra--chan."

Why did Sakayanagi-san came up with that nickname in the first place.... I can't get it out in my mind. *Sigh*.

"Just shut up already Loli-Chibi and let the Monster explain." Ryuuken-kun said with a visible irritation on his voice.

My suspect just sighed and resume his explanation.

"It was luck that Horikita was sick that time and I just took advantage of it."

"Kukuku, what does Suzune being sick have to do with that luck?"

"I changed our leader back then--"

"Changed you say?!!" Katsuragi-kun interjected as he stood up from his seat with a surprised expression on his face which was also visible with my classmates, Matsushita-san, Satou-san and Ryuuken-kun's group.

Changing leader.... is that even possible? Hmmmm... If she was sick and if she planned on retiring wouldn't the school just mark her as absent and the rights of exclusive possession would disappear???

No No No, the results says otherwise. It seems like I missed something regarding the rules...

"As I was saying I changed our leader back then, Horikita was sick and I made her retire."

"If I remember correctly Koenji also retired back then, and you're saying you also made Horikita retire? How come you still won with a huge margin having two students retire?" Katsuragi-kun asked.

"Regarding Koenji.... it's no use thinking about him since he really didn't care about anything except himself..."

"Agree." I heard some of my classmates mutter.

"Yeah he's just selfish." Satou-san added.

"Regarding Horikita's case, the rule book said that 'it is impossible

to change the leader without a suitable justification.' "

"So that's how it is... being sick would be considered a suitable reason." I muttered.

Most of my classmates also pondered for a moment and begun to understand what he was trying to say...

"As expected of Kiyō, but how did you find out the leaders of each class?" Kamuro-san asked.

"Yeah I also want to know, besides I think I didn't let my guard down during that exam." Katsuragi-kun added.

"You already let your guard down ever since you teamed up with Ryūuen's class that time."

"How did you.... Did you tell him Kamuro?"

"No." After confirming that Kamuro-san wasn't lying, he then asked and turned to Ryūuen-kun and Sakayanagi-san.

"What about the two of you Sakayanagi and Dor-Ryūuen." It seems like Katsuragi-kun also had that nickname stuck on his head.

"Fufufu, No Katsuragi-kun, did you also took a liking on Dora-chan's nickname?"

"Kukuku, are you perhaps looking for a fight, Mr.Clean? I can give you some of my precious hair if you want. Kukuku. And to answer your question, I didn't tell him a damn thing."

"Then ho-"

"You're reaction just confirmed it, it's just a deduction in the first place."

My classmates were surprised that an outsider knew or more precisely had deducted that we made a deal with Ryūuen-kun's class back then. But him just nonchalantly saying that.... It seems like he already confirmed it before.

But it's easy to guess or deduct if you properly observed the results...

"Ehh it's just a deduction?"

"I think I can answer your question." I said.

"Ehh? Are you the one who told your suspect, Ryouko-chan?" Haruka-chan asked.

"No. It's the first time I conversed with him today, and besides why would I tell someone from a different class regarding the deals our class made? Also he already said that it's a guess right?"

"Then how?" some of my classmates said.

"It's from the results right suspect, Ayanokouji-kun?" I asked as he nodded.

"What are you-" I interjected before Katsuragi-kun asked his question.

"It's obvious from the results if you observed them properly, the only way we lose points was due to the fact that our leader was

guessed and our wrong guess of the leaders of other classes, which lose us 150 points."

"That makes sense. But...then how would you connect it with our connection with Ryuuen's class?" Katsuragi-kun asked.

"If I remember correctly during the exam, my suspect together with Horikita-san scouted our camp and saw the toilets outside right?" I asked as my suspect nodded. "From an outsiders perspective, most of Ryuuen-kun's classmates retiring and our toilets that were given by Ryuuen-kun's class which were in plain view outside of the cave would be the answer right?"

"I really let my guard down huh?" As if realizing what I'm getting at, Katsuragi-kun muttered.

"Kukuku. Just like I thought you have an interesting lackey here, Chibi-Loli. More interesting than Johnny."

"Like I said, don't call me a lackey! Dora-chan."

"Kukuku. I'm sorry from the bottom of my heart, Detective-chan." He said sarcastically, what's wrong with this guy!

"You're really living up to your name Detective-chan." my suspect praised, as I smiled at him proudly. My sudden irritation from Dora-chan vanished as my suspect praised me.... "Then to answer your question from before on how I knew the identity of the leaders was also based on luck."

Again saying it as luck... but the fact that he used the rules properly and forcing Horikita-san to retire.....

He's being too modest, again.

"Luck again huh? But I disagree King, your attention to details was really fascinating. For you to come up with those strategies and countermeasures, even from the time you saved Sudou from being expelled was amazing."

"I agree." "Yeah." "He's really amazing." I heard my other classmates mutter.

"You're flattering me too much and besides there's also some here aside from Arisu who has great attention to details." He said as he looked at me.

"Now that you say it Nishikawa also has it in her." Kamuro-san pointed.

"Ehh? Me? But thanks, I guess?" Though I'm not sure if he can really say that to me since all I did was combined the information I got...

"Yeah, I can also say the same to you Masumi."

"Thank you Kiyo."

"Nice one Ryouko-chan to think that you got the attention of our mysterious new classmate." Haruka-chan teased.

"Fufufu. A new rival huh?"

Rival? In what?

"Anyway as what I'm saying from earlier we were just lucky that we stumbled upon Katsuragi and Totsuka back then when me and my former classmate went to look for some firewood. Upon seeing them, Katsuragi was the one who holds the key card on plain sight, and after observing you when you confronted both Horikita and I to not enter your cave, I can say that Katsuragi was a calm, collected and excessively cautious man. That's why I concluded that Totsuka was the leader back then and not Katsuragi."

And I'm right that he's being modest again, if it's me or some other students who saw them back then we will probably thought that Katsuragi-kun was the leader, he easily pinpointed out Totsuka-kun by just observing Katsuragi-kun's mannerisms.

"....So my gut feeling back then that someone was watching us was true." Katsuragi-kun muttered.

"Kukuku, this is why this class would never maintain its position if Johnny was the one who leads it due to his 'scaredy cat' tactics."

"Fufufu, I agree with that Dora-chan. But don't get cocky you also lost that time."

"KUKUKU, don't worry I bet the way I lose was not as pathetic as Johnny."

Why do I have the feeling that it was the other way around?

"Fufufu, did you hear that Dora-chan? Detective-chan doesn't seem to agree with what you just said."

Ehh? Did I said it out loud?

"Kukuku. You sound confident on your hunch detective-chan."

"Maybe." I replied "It's just a hunch after all."

"Ibuki was sent to be a spy on our class, at first I was doubtful that she's a spy but when we scouted the class of Ichinose and found Kaneda I was sure that it was not merely a coincidence. When we found Ibuki, her hands were full of dirt, later that time I searched the area where we found her and I found a transceiver. I also found a camera on her bag when I had the chance to."

"Fufufu. It seems like Kiyotaka-kun was a secret pervert, to think that she would secretly search a lady's bag." Sakayanagi-san teased.

"*Sigh* It was necessary since I became suspicious of her."

"Fufufu."

"The camera was supposed to be for capturing a photo of the key card, it's not like he didn't trust Ibuki and Kaneda, it's just one of the condition of your alliance, maybe Katsuragi's condition for him to accept the alliance."

Amazing even if he didn't visited our camp that time he already had a vague idea that there was some sort of deal was made between Ryuen-kun's class and ours, since he saw the camera that



Ibuki-san was hiding.

"So that just leaves the transceiver on who was she communicating with. Coincidentally when we were scouting Ryuuen's class, I noticed a transceiver of the same model on his table so I concluded that Ryuuen was the one who was communicating with Ibuki, which means that he was planning on staying on the island from the very beginning. His mistake was he didn't at least put his transceiver on his pocket."

"So who's the pathetic one now Ryuuen? To think that you lose because your transceiver was found out on your table." Katsuragi-kun mocked, did he lose his cool due to Ryuuen-kun's insults from earlier?

I saw some of my classmates widened their eyes in surprise especially his former followers, to think that the calm and collected Katsuragi-kun would retort to Ryuuen-kun like this.

It's funny on its own ways. But...

"Fufufu. How idiotic are you Katsuragi-kun? Dora-chan's primary goal was the contract you made with him winning the exam was just a secondary goal."

"What--"

"He's after the private points that he will surely get, through the contract."

"Kukuku. It seems like Loli-Chibi really understood why I sacrifice our points back then. Too bad for you Johnny."

Finally understanding what they meant Katsuragi-kun just sat quietly.

"But it was a really an idiotic mistake Dora-chan. Fufufu."

"Tch. Mark my words vengeance will be mine. Kukuku."

"Vengeance huh? I'm looking forward to it Ryueen." Surprisingly it was my suspect, Ayanokouji-kun who said that.

"Fufufu. Don't bother Kiyotaka-kun I will personally deal with him since it will be fun on it's own ways."

"Kukuku. I'm looking forward to it Loli-Chibi and Detective-chan, it will be a good warm up destroying you, before facing the final boss."

So he consider my suspect here the final boss, a greater threat than Sakayanagi-san....

Wait.

"WHY AM I INCLUDED?!!" I exclaimed as I stood from my seat.

I didn't do anything grand to gain his attention, did I?

I mean, all I did was piece together the information they've given me.

"Who knows? It seems like we're done here. Let's go Ishizaki and Albert. KUKUKUKUKUKUKUKU" He left with his laugh reverberate

across the hallway until we can't hear him, what a weird way to say their goodbyes. If I was with him I'll probably die from embarrassment.

"You had seen through their strategy perfectly... Hearing this now I feel really really bad for our class that we lose you, Kiyotaka-kun." Satou-san spoke after finally overcoming her excitement from what my suspect has revealed during the island exam. She really do like him huh, it's obvious from her actions.

"Yeah and it's all because of our own selfish reasons." Matsushita-san added. "I think we should probably go back too, thanks for allowing us to join this discussion Sakayanagi-san and Ayanokouji-kun."

"Ahh no problem Matsushita-san and Satou-san, before you go can I asked you to relay something to your class?" Sakayanagi-san asked.

"Y-yeah what is it Sakayanagi-san?"

"I have a bad feeling about this." Satou-san muttered.

"Don't worry Satou-san it won't involve the two of you."

Satou-san had a sighed of relief as she heard that. "What do you want us to tell them Sakayanagi-san?"

"Tell them that my next targets would be Shinohara-san and Miyamoto-kun."

"Ehhh? By target you mean for expulsion?" Matsushita-san asked.

"Fufufu, Who knows? Maybe I will asked them to join my class or...." she paused for a while "Maybe I will have them taste the same fate of that Yama-? Yamadead? ohh that's right, Yamauchi-kun. Fufufu."

"You're scaring them Arisu."

"I-i guess I can tell them. Then we'll get going."

"See you later Kiyotaka-kun." Satou-san said with a bright smile as she waved, where my suspect just nodded in response.

"What a tiring welcome." my suspect muttered.

"Good work suspect, Ayanokouji-kun." I said "And again, welcome to our class."

"Yeah, welcome King. And I hope you enjoy your stay here." Hashisnake-kun said as most of my classmates also welcomed him.

With that our interrogation with my suspect had ended....

...  
...  
...  
...  
...  
...

***\*Time skip Monday 3rd Person POV***

Ayanokouji arrived at the room of his new class, noticing that his former seat was gone he just assumed that he would be sitting beside Kamuro.

"Good Morning Masumi."

"Good Morning Kiyo, it seems like we would be seatmates from now on."

"Yeah, I will be in your care."

A few moments later Nishikawa arrived in the room.

"Ohayoo Kamuro-san."

"Yeah, Good Morning Nishikawa."

Nishikawa then turned to Ayanokouji and greeted him.

"Ohayoo Taka-mon."

Some of their classmates looked at their direction wondering who was she referring to.

"Ohayo Youko-tan"

As Ayanokouji greeted her back.

""EHHH?!""

What led them in this kind of development??

...

...

...

...

**\*FLASHB--**

...

...

***To be Continued.....***

**END OF FIRST ARC.**

---

Now Ryuuen-chan has noticed the potential of Ryouko-chan...  
KUKUKU.

...

...

Ryouko-chan creating her own harem?

...

...

Even Author-san don't know where this shit is going anymore....

## SS: ANPS e Yōkoso

*(Another shit and cringe idea that came into my head while writing the next chapter.)*

A month after the Class-Poll Exam

??? POV

WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON?!!

WHY AM I HERE?!!

.....

I'M HUNGRY!

THIS IS WORST THAN BEING EXPELLED!!

WHY DO I NEED TO SUFFER LIKE THIS?!!

.....

I FAILED AGAIN???

IT WAS EXTENDED?? AGAIN???

SHITTTT!!!! HOW LONG WILL I STAY HERE??!!

*\*Flashback*

SHIT SHIT SHIT!!

This shit sucks why am I the one who's expelled?

.....

It should be that gloomy guy Ayanokouji!!

And that dammed Loli just used me like an idiot!!!

DAMN! DAMN IT! I should have never trusted that BITCH LOLI!

.....

After packing up my things I met up with my teacher who will send me off.

"I'm sad to tell this to you but you would also be sent to juvenile."

Wait WHAT?????!!!!

"Huh? Why? Don't joke around Sae-chan-sensei I'm already expelled after that shitty ex--"

"Koenji filed a complain about you trying to hit him with the chair earlier."

"Huh? Why?! He caught the chair and he's unharmed!"

"No, the school already decided after seeing the video that got caught by the cameras in our room. They deemed it as a deadly strike if you planned to hit someone other than Koenji that time, it would lead to a fatal injury or worst... you might've killed someone."

NO WAY!!!

OI OI OI OI!!! YOU'RE JOKING RIGHT????!!

"You're sentence would be 1 year in there, you will be sent to the same juvenile prison as Kushida."

With Kushida-chan? That wouldn't be too bad I guess.....

NO NO NO it would be really bad!!

She's bad news right? Just like what Sae-chan-sensei said earlier.

Would I be blackmailed by her?

No No No.

There's nothing....

As I was out of my thoughts, I was grabbed by a policeman then he put handcuffs on me and led me to a car like a real suspect who had done something really bad....

This isn't really happening right?

Why?

Just because I lose my temper on Koenji's provocations earlier I would end up in prison?

DAMN IT!!

.....

After one hour of travel we arrived at a coast and they led me to a....

...ship....

Huh? Where are they taking me?

I am supposed to be taken to Tokyo detention house just like Kushida-chan, right?

DAMN IT! What's going to happen to me!..

"Wher-"

As I was about to ask my question I suddenly lose my consciousness... Is this some sort of sleepin-....

.....

When I woke up I'm sitting in a chair and was tied and had something like a duct tape on my mouth.

Damn! Where am I?

"Urgghh" I wailed "Urgghh"

"Now now, just sit down there quietly." the man who looked like a warden said. "I will explain the rules here."

Rules? What rules? Are there rules in a prison?

"Urgghh" I wailed in my seat again "Urg-"

SMACK

IT FUCKING HURTS!!

He slapped me in the face strong enough that would feel like a punch.

"Didn't I tell you to just sit down there quietly?! Can't you fucking understand my words?"

I just shook my head out of fear.

"Then let's begin, WELCOME TO THE FUCKING ADVANCE NURTURING PRISON SCHOOL!! In short ANPS."

ANHS really sounded similar to ANPS..... I already had a bad feeling about this.

"I will only tell the rules here once, you gotta listen carefully and imprint what I said in your fucking brain. Nod if you understand."

I nodded, this guy is really scary.

He then grabbed a piece of paper and scanned it.

"Yamauchi huh? Ehh so you're from the same school and same class of that bitch who came yesterday. HAAAAHA."

She's talking about Kushida-chan right?

"Labeled as a defective from there and ending up here as a defective."

DAMN IT!!

Even here they still call me a defective!

"Then let's start. In here you will still have classes in the morning from 7:00AM to 12:00PM, you will have free time from 12:00PM to 1:00PM. The tasks which would earn you meal tickets would start at 1:00PM until 7:00AM. You can choose to do those task or just fucking skip them, it's up to you. The tasks here are manual labor."

He said it's for meal tickets so I won't survive here if I didn't do those.

"But... There's also some ways to shorten your sentence...

You can shorten your sentence here and be free earlier, each juvie here will fight for it.

Your declared sentence would be your starting line.

You will have special exams which would be announce a day before it will begin."

Special Exams again? I'm fucking tired of those shit.

"But of course if you failed the exam your sentence would be extended."

Huh? That's absurd!!

"Each special exam will reward you days, weeks or months of decrease in your sentence. But as I said earlier if you're one of the failures your sentence would be extended, the increase would be quadrupled of the reward."

That's fucking absurd if the reward was 2 months, my one year here would become.....

...Wait...

.... what does quadrupled means?

**(Yamagod is still Yamagod)**

"But don't worry your sentence will not last for a lifetime.... yet."

Yet? What does that-

"Teens who got here will only stay until they are 21 as the maximum sentence."

If I always fail my exams I will stay here for 5 years?!

WHAT THE FUCK!

"After they are released here, if they did something which is deemed as a criminal act AGAIN they would be sent to the other side of this prison which was for adults. They will have lifetime sentence... Now that I think about it there was an adult who worked as a store clerk at your former school, he's currently on the other side which I'm talking about."

Who's he talking about?

"Then Yamauchi, GOOD FUCKING LUCK GETTING OUT OF HERE EARLY! If you can HAHAAAAHA." he exclaimed and left.

That shitty bastard!

Huh? You're joking right?! He just left me here like this?

"Lead him to his cell now." I heard the voice of the warden looking guy from the outside.

"Yes sir."

Then another guard came into the room, freed me, and led me to my cell.

.....

It stinks and my room-, no cellmate was someone who has a body build like Ken.

"Yo." I greeted him, then he looked and just glared at me with his scary looking face.

"Heh? So you're my new cellmate I hope you last long being with me HAAAAHA." He said in a mocking voice. "Shoo Shoo, just get out of here you pathetic bastard and don't forget to pay me when you use the bed under me."

Pay? What would I pay him? What the hell did he mean?

I just left him without thinking about what he said too much.

There really are classrooms here a canteen and a mine? Is that where the task are held on to?

As I was roaming around the prison.....

I saw a familiar figure. So she was really here.

"Ya-hoo Kushida-chan!"

She looked at me with a really angry face unlike the angel that me and Kanji knew and adored.

"Yamauchi Why the hell are you here?!" Her voice now was unlike the Kushida-chan I know which was really scary.

"W-well Koenji....." I explained the things that happened, about Koenji's provocations and that gloomy guy transferring class.

"Is that so, that gloomy bastard again huh?"

"Y-yeah."

"Then starting today don't you fucking talk to me ever again, you pervert creep!.." she said as she walked away from me.

What the hell is her problem!

You think you're still an angel even now?

You just became a bitch!

DAMN IT!

After some time roaming around I got back on our cell and....

"Oi don't just lie down on my bed and give me your payment!"

"What do you mean P-payment?"

"Huh?! You're an idiot are ya? MEAL TICKETS, MEAL TICKETS!!!" he said angrily "This bunk bed is mine if you don't have meal tickets to pay me you will sleep on the floor!"

"You're kidding right?"

"No, I'm not so what will you do? Will you pay me or sleep on the cold floor?"

"I will report you."

"HAHAHA That's unfortunate for you things are different here."

"Huh?"

"The strong here rules the weak, so if you don't work for me and do the labor, I can beat you up and the guards that monitor the area would never care about a damn thing. So? What will you do now?"

This can't be real right?!

*"Gomenasai Gomenasai! I promise to work again and bring you more meal tickets so please don't beat me up!..."* I heard a pleading voice from the other cell.

So what he said was true.

Damn it!

"See? You heard that another pathetic guy on that cell?" He said as he pointed at the cell to my right. "My only condition here is the bunk bed, you can't use it without paying. But if you just continue to come into our cell without paying maybe I will change the conditions and I will beat you up even without warning and steal what you had? HAHAHA."

Am I going to live in hell? With this guy?

**\*FLASHBACK ENDS**

After one month of staying here I think I lose some weight the same as I observed with Kushida.

The food sucks and my cellmate just fucking robbed me with my work.

This is fucking hell!

I read the slip of paper which was supposed to be the result of our previous special exam.

Yamauchi Haruki failed current accumulated sentence 1 year, 6 months and 15 days.



I FAILED AGAIN???

IT WAS EXTENDED?? AGAIN???

My supposed to be 1 year of sentence became a year and half?

SHITTTT!!!! HOW LONG WILL I STAY HERE??!!

WILL I REALLY STAY HERE FOR 5 MORE YEARS?

## Chapter 21: Days before the Final Special Exam. Part 1

### **3RD PERSON POV**

After the somewhat tiresome welcome of his new class.

"Uhhhm, A-ayanokouji-kun can I get your contact information?" Tanahira Mao boldly asked nervously as her friends cheered for her. She has a meekly vibe just like Sakura but more outgoing and braver than her.

'Seriously??' Some of the guys thought as they were somewhat jealous of him. 'But after hearing those revelations I guess it should be expected that he would become popular, but I didn't think that it would be this early.'

"Uhh, sure." Ayankouji replied as he gave out his contact information. 'Being the center of attention is really tiring.' he thought.

"T-thanks! And welcome to our class!" said Tanahira as she ran back to her friends with a bright red face, as her friends teased her in return.

"It seems like King is already creating his Harem on his first day here, catching girls like they are Pukimon. Will you catch em all?"

"Completing the Pukidex aren't we,King?" Sawada Yasumi added.

"Fufufu, as expected of Kiyotaka-kun his charms are getting noticed by now." Sakayanagi teased as Ayanokouji just sighed at their teasing.

"Wanna eat lunch with us, King?" Hashimoto asked as Kitou Hayato and Nishi Haruka stood beside him.

"Fufufu, now that was a good idea Hashimoto-kun, do you want to join us Masumi-san and Detective-chan?"

"Sure, if Kiyu will go with us."

"I'm in!"

'Looking at the time it it seems like we really took a lot of time with those troublesome revelations.' Ayanokouji thought as he nodded at Hashimoto's invitation 'I'm kind of hungry.'

"Then let's go, why don't we eat somewhere in Keyaki mall since classes are already over?" Nishikawa suggested.

"Can't we just eat at the cafeteria here in school?" Ayanokouji declined "I don't want to gather more attention today since I'm

already tired of what happened earlier."

"Typical Kiyo." Kamuro chuckled.

"Fufufu. Then let's go with Kiyotaka-kun's suggestion." she then faced Yamamura who sat beside her "Do you want to join us Yamamura-san?"

"Can I decline?"

"Fufufu. what if you can't?"

"Sigh And here I thought I could enjoy reading my book."

"Boo! You're no fun Miki. Right Haruka?"

"Yeah."

"You're just too outgoing Ryouko. You already knew that I'm the opposite of that."

"Whose Body?' huh? That was an interesting book you're reading Yamamura." Ayanokouji commented as he saw the title of the book Yamamura wanted to read.

"You know this?"

"Yeah it was something Hiyori recommended me to read."

"Hiyori? You mean Shiina-san from Ryuen-kun's class? You're close?" Nishi asked

"Yeah we're something you may call book buddies."

"Book buddies?"

"We enjoy reading books together and we share our opinions on them."

"Hmm, so that's why you're always together at the library." Yamamura commented.

"Yeah, maybe next time you could just join us Yamamura, I think it will make Hiyori happy if we had someone we can share our opinions to."

"....I'll think about it."

"It seems like my suspect Ayanokouji-kun has a lot of girl-friends. You will make a lot of boys jealous, you know." Nishikawa teased.

"No no Nishikawa, that's just the power of our King."

"Fufufu. Then shall we go now?"

As they proceeded to the school's cafeteria, the only people who are there were some third year students and some students from Class-B and Class-C, surprisingly there were no students from Ayanokouji's former class.

Ayanokouji received some weird gazes from his fellow batchmates, but he just shrugged them off.

Some students from Ichinose's class who knew him wanted to congratulate him for moving class, but...

'It seems like he's waiting for me here huh?' Ayanokouji thought as he saw a familiar face approaching them. 'And after observing the surroundings there are no second year students in here, maybe

they were currently having their own special exam?"

"Good work Ayanokouji."

"Hello rude Kouhai-kun."

This surprised the new classmates of Ayanokouji with the exception of Sakayanagi and Kamuro, as the former SCP and his secretary approached them, more specifically Ayankouji.

"Yo, Horikita-senpai." Ayanokouji greeted him back "and Tachibanana-senpai, are the two of you on a date as usual?"

"Wh-what are you saying!" Tachibana exclaimed as she had a reddened face. "And don't call me a banana!"

"Calm down Tachibana. *Sigh*." The elder Horikita replied. "What do you mean as usual? We're just preparing for our final special exams for next week."

'But Horikita-kun is not denying that the two of us dated, did he consider those times as dates?.' Tachibana thought as he heard the reply of the elder Horikita.

"If you say so..."

'So the former SCP is as dense as our King.' Hashimoto thought. 'And it seems like they are close, he probably knew our King's capabilities, so this is what Nagumo-senpai was talking about that night at the mix training camp.'

'Ohh maybe it was him who supplied those missing points.' Nishikawa realized.

'I want to read my book, joining them was a big mistake.' Yamamura thought.

"Fufufu, so what does the former SCP and his former secretary need with our Kiyotaka-kun?"

"No, we just want to congratulate him for his transfer to your class."

"To think that the rude Kohai-kun did something unbelievable in his first year in this school."

"Fufufu. But the former SCP doesn't seem surprised by this."

"Since it's him this kind of thing was just something I could expect from him."

"Fufufu. I could agree with that Horikita-senpai."

"Anyway Congratulations again Ayanokouji, let's go Tachibanana."

"Not you too Horikita-kun!" she voiced out bashfully.

"Fufufu what a cute little couple."

Hearing Sakayanagi's comment Tachibana madly blushed as they've gone back to their classmates.

"That was intense to think that Ayanokouji-kun was also close to the former SCP." Nishi commented.

"But if you look back they somewhat knew each other because of

the race they had from the Sport's Festival right? And both Tachibana-senpai and Horikita-senpai were cute together, right?" Nishikawa asked as Nishi nodded in response.

"Fufufu. speaking of Sport's Festival, it was that time where Masumi-san and Kiyotaka-kun first conversed right?"

"Now that the Chibi-Loli said it, it's been some time since I first talked to Kiyo huh? How nostalgic."

"Aren't you glad now that I tasked you to bring him to me that day, Sumi-chan?"

'What are they talking about?' their other companions thought.

"Tch. Whatever you say Loli-Chibi."

"As expected of King to get the recognition of the former SCP. And Kamuro just nonchalantly using the nickname Ryuuken gave our princess."

"Fufufu."

"Can we leave those talks for a while and order our meals?" Ayanokouji requested.

"I agree." Yamamura added.

"Miki just wanted to continue reading her book, right Ryouko?" Nishi teased.

"Yeah, since it's Miki it was just normal for her." Nishikawa replied as Yamamura just shrugged them off.

"Fufufu, then let's order our meals shall we?"

The group then proceeded to buy their own meals.

"Ohoho, I didn't knew my suspect Ayanokouji-kun was such a heavy eater." Nishikawa stated as she pointed out to what Ayanokouji has ordered.

"And who's fault is that?"

"Ehh?"

"You're so called 'interrogation' earlier made me this hungry."

"Ohoho, that's what you get for teasing me too much." She happily declared while having a 'V' sign with her hand.

Without waiting for everyone's return and ignoring Nishikawa. "Itadakimasu."

"Yaa! don't ignore me."

"Fufufu it seems like the two of you get along really well, don't you agree Masumi-san?" Sakayanagi said as they returned with their own orders which was carried by Kamuro.

"I guess?..." she replied

"You make us jealous Detective-chan..."

"Ehh?"

"Oi, don't include me because I'm not." Kamuro the tsundere retorted.

"Fufufu. If you say so."

"Can I sit beside you, Kiyo?" requested Kamuro as she didn't want to sit beside Sakayanagi.

"I don't mind."

"Thanks."

"I thought you weren't jealous? Your actions says otherwise. Fufufu." Sakayanagi said as she sat at the other side, beside Ayanokouji. She's planning to sit on his lap but as she saw that Ayanokouji was already eating, and she just shrugged off the idea. 'Maybe next time. Fufufu.'

"Shut up Loli. Hmpph."

Hearing the back and forth bickering of the two Nishikawa chuckled lightly "Now I could say the same to you, Sakayanagi-san. Both you and Kamuro-san really get along well."

"Fufufu. Is that how it looked to you?"

"What are you talking about, Nishikawa? This Loli is just irritating me."

Hashimoto, Nishi, Yamamura, and Kitou arrived and the gang casually ate their food, having some small talks here and there as Ayanokouji was always the one who was targeted by their questions, while Sakayanagi just continued to tease/irritate Kamuro.

The atmosphere was 'light' as described by the other students in their minds.

"Wanna go to the Karaoke after this, King?"

"I think I'll pass for today since I'm kind of tired and I'm already sleepy." he replied as he had an obvious fake yawn, but they didn't point it out since they knew how tiring it was explaining things to someone.

"I guess you're right, we'll plan it on a later date. So shall we go back to the dorms?"

"I'm going to the library first since, I want to borrow more books." Yamamura said.

"Is that so? Then I guess I'll tag along with you." Nishi replied.

"Fufufu, what about you Detective-chan?"

"Hmm? I'm going back to the dorms I want to take a nap, I didn't get much sleep last night."

"Then let's go." Hashimoto said "Later Yamamura and Nishi."

"Yeah. Later." Nishi replied as Yamamura just nodded in reponse

They bid their farewells as the five of them have gone back to the dorms.

....

....

....

Ayanokouji arrived at his room, he just casually placed his bag

beside his bed, removed his blazer and had lied down on his bed.

Ignoring the notifications he got on his phone and turning it to silent mode, he had gone to sleep even though it was just around 2PM....

### ***Kiyotaka POV***

I woke up from my nap, actually it wasn't a nap since I overslept for too long. As I checked my phone it was currently 11PM.

"What a long nap." I muttered to myself.

I have a lot of notifications, some were from my previous class their message were mostly apologies for what they've done, I just ignored them for now and will have some short reply tomorrow.

I also noticed that Masumi added me to some group chats that belonged to Class-A, which also includes a group chat with same members from earlier which was named 'Sakayanagi Faction - Main'.

I scrolled up to the messages and it seems like they were planning to hangout tomorrow after lunch, and I'm already included since Arisu accepted the invitation in my stead.

'What a troublesome childhood friend.'

I noticed that Masumi was still online so I sent her a message.

[Yo, still awake?] :Kiyo

Masumi: [Yeah, I just finished my artwork that I will submit tomorrow.]

[For a competition?] :Kiyo

Masumi: [Yeah.]

[Well, good luck on that.] :Kiyo

[If it's you I think you'll win,  
since you're really good on what you're doing.] :Kiyo

Masumi: [Thanks Kiyo.]

Masumi: [Wanna play some chess before sleeping?]

[It's been a while since we played huh?] :Kiyo

Masumi: [Yeah we've been both busy from the past few days, specially you.]

[Then let's play, I just woke up from my nap.  
Just notify me if you're already sleepy.] :Kiyo

Masumi: [haha that's a long nap you had there.]  
[Maybe I can accompany you until 1:30]

[Thanks, what time will you  
submit your work tomorrow?] :Kiyo  
[Maybe I can accompany you? since I don't  
have anything planned aside from  
what Hashimoto and Arisu planned.] :Kiyo

Masumi: [Around 10AM.]  
[I don't mind, you can come with me.]

We then played chess in our phones as planned, she'd really improved drastically. Even though it was just almost a week since I taught her. It just means that she practiced within those days we had that Class Poll exam.

### ***Time skip 1:45AM***

Masumi: [That was fun Kiyo. I'm tired and sleepy now.]

[Thank you Masumi,  
then you should go to sleep now.] :Kiyo

Masumi: [Yeah, Goodnight Kiyo.]  
[See you later.]

[Yeah Goodnight.] :Kiyo

Nothing noteworthy to do, since almost of my plans were already set up. I slept again...

### ***Time skip***

I'm currently waiting for Masumi at the building where the Art Convention would be held on.

"Good Morning Kiyo."

"Good Morning Suspect, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Good Morning." I greeted them back "I'm surprised that the two of you were together, Detective-chan."

"Well I'm also a participant of the event, since this is a free for all event."

"Is that so?"



"The event was open for all years and it was held once a month." Masumi added.

"Points were the reward right?" I asked.

"I'm surprised you knew. How did you know?"

I remembered Yamauchi and Ike joined this event once since they wanted points, they said that they're confident in their drawing skills. But after joining once they never mentioned the event again.

"Some guys from my class joined it, but after joining once they've quit since they didn't won."

"Ohh, that would be that creep Yamauchi and that pervert Ike right?" Masumi said as I nodded.

"Now that you mentioned it they did something embarrassing that time that even now I remember it." Detective-chan added.

"What did they do?"

They didn't answer.

"Both of them submitted a drawing of a dick." Yamamura joined the conversation as she arrived.

"M-miki..."

"What? I just told him what they did, and besides those creeps really disgust me, I'm glad that one of them is already gone."

I knew she was blunt, but I didn't think it was this much.

"I can agree with that Yamamura." Masumi said.

"Miki you don't have to be too blunt."

"Good Morning Yamamura. I didn't knew you were this harsh." I greeted.

"Good Morning. I just said my own thoughts on the matter."

"Are you also participating in the event?" I asked.

"From time to time, but this time I'm not."

"Is that so? Then let's go." I said as I started walking towards the entrance which they followed.

I asked things regarding the competition. It seems like they can submit their work until 12:00 and the judges will judge them until 3:00PM.

They will announce the result at 4:00PM after tallying their scores.

You can leave your work here if you have some important matters to attend to, if you won they will just send you a message and can claim your prizes afterwards.

Masumi said that she just always left her work here and leave as she has matters to attend regarding Sakayanagi.

The prizes were varied depending on the number of contestants, sometimes they select 10-15 winners. But of course the ranks that will win you a lot of points would be 1st-5th place.

Masumi won 3-1st place, a 2nd place, and a 3rd place. She's

really dedicated.

Detective-chan said she just won a 4th place, 6th place and 3-8th place.

While Yamamura won a 3rd place, 2-4th place and a 6th place.

They said that Tachibana-senpai was also a regular participant of the event, together with some other third year Class-A and B students. They said that Tachibana-senpai had tied with Masumi twice for first place. Even though she's not part of the club she's matching up with Masumi huh?

So she's not just a mascot of the elder Horikita huh?

Shiranami from Honami's class was also participating regularly since both she and Masumi are from the same club. Asahina-senpai was also participating from time to time.

It seems like from the very first time Ike and Yamauchi joined the contest they were already banned from joining again after the stunt they've done.

Placing their work on the vacant spaces provided for viewing, both Masumi and Detective-chan proceeded to inform the staff and filled up some sort of form.

I observed their work together with Yamamura, and to be honest their works were incredible, specially Masumi's painting it was breathtaking. Detective-chan's work was also amazing, it was a sketch using colored pencils.

We then proceeded to check the other participants work and check them, but I can already see that Masumi will win a first place again and Detective-chan will probably rank at 2nd or 3rd place this time.

As we continue to observe the other participants work...

"Oho, it seems like my 'Favorite Kouhai' is having a date with three beautiful girls."

"Good Morning Asahina-senpai. I thought Honami was your 'Favorite Kouhai'?"

The good thing is Nagumo was not with her, as it would lead to some troublesome stuff if he sees me.

But the bad thing was another troublesome senpai was with her.

"Huhu, it already change after the things you've done. Impressive as always."

"Can we join you, Kouhai-kun?" the troublesome senpai finally spoke.

"Good Morning to you, Fuuka-chan-senpai." I replied, you're wondering how I knew her?

....

***To be Continued.....***

## Chapter 22: Days before the Final Special Exam. Part 2

### 3RD PERSON POV

"Good Morning to you, Fuuka-chan-senpai." Ayanokouji greeted the platinum haired beauty.

"Ehh? You knew each other, Fuuka-chan?" asked by the surprised Asahina. "And to think that you're close as he used your first name."

"HAHAHA, of course this Kouhai-kun was interesting after all, that's why I let him use my first name."

"Don't you mean 'forced', Kiryuuin-senpai?" Ayanokouji retorted as Kiryuuin stared at him intently when he referred her with her last name. "Sigh Fine, Fuuka-chan-senpai."

"Good."

"Did the both of you also participate in the event Asahina-senpai?" Nishikawa asked.

"I'm the only one who participated, Fuuka-chan was just accompanying me."

"You two seemed pretty close." Ayanokouji said.

"Well you could say I'm her only friend. Since you know..."

'Her personality huh?' Ayanokouji thought.

"What are you saying Nazuna, Kouhai-kun was also a friend of mine. Now from my previous question, can we join you Kouhai-kun?"

As Ayanokouji doesn't want to deal with his troublesome senpai, he came out with the excuse about their planned hangout later.

"Sorry senpai, we had some things planned together with my new classmates after this." He said as he looked at the three girls who were accompanying him, as they just nodded in response.

"Ehhh, so you already got a busy schedule right after you transferred classes, totally different from your previous one huh?"

"You can say that." he nonchalantly replied.

"So what time?" Kiryuuin asked.

"Hmm?"

"Your plans with your new classmates."

"After lunch, maybe around 1PM."

"Then let us tag along until that time." she said as she looked at her phone checking the time, it was just currently 11:45AM.

"By 'us' you mean..." He then glanced at Asahina who was just innocently smiling at their interaction.

"Hehe. It's fine right? Since you're my favorite kouhai now."

"What does being your favori--"

"No no no, it has nothing to do with it, and besides aren't you delighted that you would be with your two beautiful senpais Ki-yo-ta-ka-kun?" Asahina playfully said as she winked at him.

She received a glare with Kamuro who was beside Ayanokouji. While both Nishikawa and Yamamura just observed them.

"Not really, Nazuna-chan-senpai." He calmly replied.

"...."

Critical hit...

He just teased back by also using her first name. As of this moment Asahina became dead silent as she had a flushed pink face.

She knew Ayanokouji was amazing when she asked him to lend a hand regarding Ichinose's case and his sudden transfer yesterday also made a buzz in their year. But she never thought....

'Is this how he won Honami's heart?' she thought as she looked down flustered.

"Even a beautiful senpai like Asahina-senpai was having a hard time teasing my suspect huh?" Nishikawa muttered as she chuckled a bit.

"Oho, to think that you would make Nazuna look like this, what a playboy." Kiryuuin stated having a smirk as she found it amusing. "And Kouhai, why are you referring to my Kouhai-kun as your suspect, hmm?" she then turned her attention to Nishikawa as she was curious to why she called him a 'suspect'.

"No Etto..." Nishikawa was hesitating on what she would say, she then looked at Ayanokouji if it's fine to tell their senpais.

"What's wrong Kouhai, trying to keep a secret from your beautiful senpais?"

"It's fine I guess and besides she won't stop if you didn't give her a proper answer."

"HAHAHA would you look at that, my Kouhai-kun really knows me well." the female Koen- suddenly 3rd-POV felt a smack on their back when they tried to tease the silver haired beauty. "It's almost time for lunch why don't we talk about it while we have a lunch together."

They then proceeded to the exit of the building and proceeded to Pallet Cafe located at the Keyaki mall.

As they walk towards the mall, the girls were chatting while Ayanokouji was fiddling with his phone, Kiryuuin then slowed her

pace to match Ayanokouji's and saw what he typed.

"S.O.S huh?" Kiryuuin smirked as she saw the message. "Ehh to think my Kouhai-kun would need someone's help."

Ayanokouji just ignored what she said and placed his phone on his pocket.

"Fuuka-chan-senpai I thought that you don't want to involve yourself with uninteresting people, so why are you hanging out with us?" Ayanokouji asked in a low voice for the others couldn't hear, he was referring to his 3 girl companions.

'And here I thought she would chase them away, since she somehow has the same personality as Koenji' He thought.

"Hmm? They're passable in that regard I guess?" Kiryuuin replied. "But of course I want to spend my precious time with my Kouhai-kun."

"Sigh And here I thought I could find myself an excuse to you."

"HAHAHA Don't be like that Kouhai-kun, the great Fuuka-sama will surely make your day complete by being with you even if it's just a short time." she loudly declared.

"Hai hai, the great Fuuka-onee-chan-sama-senpai." he teased.

"Now that's what I'm talking about." she replied "But I'm not that easy, like Nazuna." she added as Asahina looked back at the two of them hearing this.

"Stop it Fuuka-chan!! I just let my guard down earlier." Asahina retorted.

"If you say so. HAHAHA."

.....

They arrived at the cafe and had their lunch while having a discussion about the things that happened yesterday.

'Lucky him having a harem with five beautiful girls.' The guys around thought.

And of course the jealous guys will have their own thoughts on this. 'Die Ike-men!!!'

Nagumo together with his Class-A goons were also nearby and want to confront Ayanokouji regarding his sudden transfer and preventing himself from getting expelled, but as he saw that he was together with Kiryuuin.....

'Maybe tomorrow.' MrNoticeMeSenpai thought as he backed off. 'But why Nazuna was with them?' he wondered.

'So being with Fuuka-chan-senpai also has its own merits huh?' Ayanokouji thought as he felt the presence of Nagumo leaving.

.....

.....

After their lunch and talk about what happened yesterday, Ayanokouji together with his three new classmates bid farewell to

their senpais.

Surprisingly Kiryuuin and Asahina got along with the three girls.

Kiryuuin never thought them as fun as her 'Kouhai-kun' but at the same time they're not that boring as the 'AttentionSeekingBlondie'.

She was now referring to Nishikawa as her Kouhai-chan.

She also referred Masumi as 'Cerveza'-chan which meant 'Beer' in Spanish language.

The only one who got on what she meant by 'cerveza' was Ayanokouji and Yamamura.

'Masumi would probably hate her if she eventually knew the real meaning of that.' Ayanokouji thought.

While Yamamura was still Yamamura, as Kiryuuin can't seem to properly read/gauge her.

The one who received his S.O.S message never came.

'What a snake.' Ayanokouji thought as he just shrugged it off. He knew that he was already nearby as he also felt his presence.

### ***Hashimoto POV***

I'm together with Nishi and Kitou as we're currently on our way to Hime's room to get her for our planned hangout later together with the group which also includes the new member, the possessor of the almighty T-rex and our King, Ayanokouji.

Hime just easily accepted my sudden invitation of the hangout even though we still had our final special examination in the upcoming days.

She's really confident huh? Being lenient even though the exam will be announced tomorrow. But I guess I could also feel the same way because our class already have the former Mastermind of the Defective Class.

My thoughts were interrupted while we are on the elevator entrance, I received a message from the King himself.

'S.O.S' the message said. 'Here at Pallet.'

It seems like our King was in trouble, but I wonder what could be the Almighty King have trouble with? That he asked a snake like myself for some help.

Is this a bluff? Even if it is, I decided to play along with him. Since I also want to gain his favor **2**.

"Nishi, Kitou. I received a message from King and it seems like he's in trouble."

"Eh?"

"...." Kitou just stared at him observing him if he's saying the truth.

"So you two should fetch Hime and I will go there first, go meet us up at Pallet."

"Okay, we'll fetch her. Let's go Kitou."

"Yeah."

I left the dorms and ran towards the direction of Pallet.

...

...

But as I get there, I just facepalmed.

"S.O.S my ass." I muttered.

The almighty holder of the biggest Chinchinmaru of school or maybe the whole world wants help regarding this? Or he's just bragging that he has five beautiful girls with him?

But knowing him it's probably the former as he already said that he disliked attention.

Three of them were classmates while the other two were some senpai, one was the famous beauty, Asahina-senpai and the other one was 2nd year Class-B's lone wolf, if I remember correctly she was Kiryuuin Fuuka-senpai. I knew them since Hime also tasked me to spy on the second and third year students from before.

As I was about to approach them I received an intense scary glare from Kiryuuin-senpai that could rival Hime's glare, saying 'Don't you dare interfere.'

Scary, is she perhaps one of those possessive type?

I just sighed defeated.

I backed down and just sat on a chair, while waiting for Hime and the others.

After some time it seems like they're done, surprisingly Hime and the others were still not here. Did she knew that it was really not a 'trouble' to be worried about?

"Hime really trust him, huh?" I muttered as I had a heavy sigh again.

Suddenly I felt a tap on my back.

"What's with the long sigh Kouhai?"

"Hello senpai, you already knew the answer right?" I greeted, it was Kiryuuin-senpai. It seems like she also parted ways with Asahina-senpai.

"HAHAHA, Good thing you got my message from earlier."

"Of course I'm not that dumb to approach a lion's den after you gave that scary look on your face."

"HAHAHA, it seems like you're not that dumb... Your name?"

"Hashimoto Masayoshi." I responded.

"Be grateful that the great Kiryuuin Fuuka, let her introduce yourself. Just don't get boring or I might forget that you even existed."

Now I'm kind of getting some Koenji vibes from her.

"Did you think of something rude about me Snake-kun?"



"No no I wouldn't dare. And why are you calling me a snake senpai?"

"Your classmate Cerveza-chan has talked about someone, a snake she hated. And I got the feeling that you are that one."

'Cerveza-chan'? who's that?

Was it Kamuro? I think it is, she's the only who hated me and called me a snake.

"Anyways that's all from me." she stated "And it seems like your Chibi-leader is already here."

As I looked toward on where she was looking I saw Hime in her casual clothes and as usual she has that signature smug smile of hers.

"Later Snake-kun."

"Yeah Kiryuuin-senpai."

Hime together with Kitou and Nishi approached my direction and I just explained to Hime what happened.

"Fufufu to think that even the lone lioness of the second year also took an interest to Kiyotaka-kun." Hime stated "Then let's fetch them and begin our little hangout now."

**3RD PERSON POV (Author-san was lazy coming up with some dialogues.)**

The group first went back to the venue of the event which Kamuro and Nishikawa joined in, but this time they strolled the venue with the seven of them.

They passed some students from Ayanokouji's former class.

They are afraid to approach Ayanokouji because they still felt guilty after what they've done to their classmate.

Shinohara who was with them tensed up as she saw Sakayanagi.

'Fufufu, so both Matsushita-san and Satou-san really informed her huh?'

After sharing their opinions, they then went to a Karaoke, forcing Ayanokouji to sing.

Did they succeed in making him sing?

Yes.

But at what cost?

They signed a contract:

*I Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, will sing three songs but with these conditions.*

● *There should be no sorts of recordings, be it a photo, video or voice recording.*

● *No one from my audience should tell a soul about my singing.*

*Anyone who breached the contract will cost all who signed it 100K points each.*

They all signed the paper and took a photo of it. Why did they even agree to it? They were curious on why Ayanokouji was intently refusing when they asked him to sing.

Ayanokouji began to sing....

....

And they began laughing. It really didn't fit him....

'Sigh Just like I thought my monotone voice wasn't really fit for singing.'

The participants of the event received a message of the results, Kamuro won 2nd place and Nishikawa won at 4th place.

Then the two of them proposed that they will treat the group with dinner later, which the group happily accepted.

They continued singing while discussing some other matters.

But who caught all their attention, that even Ayanokouji seemed surprised?

...

It was the quiet guy Kitou, he's really good at singing it surprised most of the since no one knew that he could sing this well, since he always refuse when they ask him from before.

'You can never judge a book by its cover, huh?'

....

....

## ***TIMESKIP***

### ***Nishikawa Ryouko POV***

After our fun little hangout I've gone back to my room, took a nice warm bath and changed to my sleeping clothes, after that I've proceeded to the kitchen to take a bottle of milk from the fridge.

"How refreshing." I muttered as I felt elated finishing the drink.

I've noticed that my phone that was placed on the table was blinking a green light, indicating that I received a message.

I opened it and surprisingly the message was from my suspect, Ayanokouji-kun.

Suspect-Ayanon: [Come to my room I need to talk to you.]

EHHH?!!

[Why? I just took a bath and

I'm planning to sleep now]: Nishikawa

[And what are we going to talk about?]: Nishikawa

Suspect-Ayanon: [You're an early sleeper huh?]

Suspect-Ayanon: [And it's nice that you already took a bath since I think this talk will take while.]

[Ehhh? What do you want from a girl that just took her bath? Are you trying to...]: Nishikawa

I tried to tease him by not finishing what I typed but knowing the guy named Ayanokouji-kun he will just shrugged it off or will tease me back...

Suspect-Ayanon: [It seems like I have no choice to force you to come here.]

Suspect-Ayanon: [*1A\_Nishikawa\_Ryouko.pdf*]

He sent me a file that was named after me, I instantly downloaded the file as I was really curious about the content.

My eyes widened as I opened the file, it contains information regarding me: permanent address, birthdate, former middle school, etc.

But what really surprised me was the last part of the file....

That part shook my core...

*'....She was a victim of sexual exploitation, as her mother sold photos and videos of her daughters....'*

"....H-how??"

***To be Continued.....***

**Next Chapter would be a bit dark and not safe for kids....**

## Chapter 23: ⚠️ Confrontation ⚠️

### **AYANOKOUJI POV**

As I opened the door I was greeted by the sight of the one I threatened to come into my room from earlier.

If someone saw her right now, they might get the wrong idea on why she was here.

She's wearing a pair of red pajamas as I could smell the sweet scent of her shampoo from her beautiful long silver-gray hair.

She has a downcast look on her face..... is what I initially thought....

Her eyes were full of determination, like she's always ready to tackle each and every problem that may come in her way.

And my other suspicion that she was wearing contact lenses was correct since her usual sky blue eyes were different from the light purple eyes she had right now .

"So Ayanokouji-kun, what's your goal?"

She didn't ask me why I'm doing this, nor what do I want, nor what are my motives, instead she asked my goal....

Also she didn't refer me as her 'suspect' this time, which somehow felt strange as I was already used to her calling me that. Sad.

It seems like I need to reevaluate the girl named Nishikawa Ryouko again...

### **NISHIKAWA POV**

As I read the last part of the file, painful memories from the past were flowing back into my mind.

The face of someone I loathed the most.

The face of someone that I miss so much.

The face of someone we promised to protect.

And the things that happened to us quickly began to invade my mind.

I fell on my knees trembling as I was in this state of panic.

I could feel myself vomiting at any moment and my body trembles as I remember the feel of her face on my lap....

.....

.....

And yeah there she is, the face of someone who helped me get back on my own two feet.

The face of someone who helped us take the first step on moving on... Shuuna-san.

*'Stay strong Ryouko'* Words of encouragement that somehow warms my heart.

....

"Stay strong Ryouko!!!"

I shouted to no one.

"Stay strong Ryouko!!!"

And I did it again but this time with a louder voice... slowly but surely I will recompose myself.

"Stay strong Ryouko!!!"

After the third one I somehow manage to come back to my senses.

When I was always in this state Shuuna-san would just hug me and say those words to me, to make me calm down. But everytime that she's not around I somehow manage to calm down myself by shouting the exact same words when I remember her face.

"It's been a year and a half since the last time I was like that huh?" I muttered to myself as I gradually felt that my throat was a bit itchy due to my shouting. I slowly closed my eyes as I came back to my senses, I took some deep breathes to ease the pain in my throat and analyzed my current situation.

First of all how did he get that file?

The file has the header which the school used for test papers and other forms, so I can assume that it's not just my file only that he had, maybe our whole class, his former class, or even our whole year?

If he really had files of other students, maybe a higher-up from the school gave them to him. I can also assume that the Student Council have these files, but I can't really confirm it since I don't know what's the extent of their power regarding information. Presumably it was from the SC, was it the former SCP who provided him based on their interaction from yesterday?

But I can't be sure on those assumptions, there's also a possibility that students can buy information like this from teachers. If he bought it then why specifically me?

Moving on, if the sole reason was wanting something from me, he wouldn't just reveal himself or directly message me, he himself would make his identity anonymous.

I took my phone to check his previous messages as I opened it there's a new message from him.

His demands are;

*[Don't bring your phone or any recording devices, and come into my room alone.]*

So he gave me an insurance huh, he's confident that I won't report him to the school.

I took another one deep breath.

"....Yosh!"

Let's see what's his game here.

After I sent a small message...

I left my phone on the table and started to proceed to his room.

I first apologized to my neighbors because of my shouting from earlier.

I took the stairs since I don't want to look suspicious on the other students who passed me, and it will also give me the time to think.

.....

.....

I arrived at the front door of his room.

It looks like he removed the wireless doorbell which were provided to us.

I just knocked at the door, and as soon the door opened...

"So Ayanokouji-kun, what's your goal?" I asked as I directly looked at him.

"Relax, just like I said from the message I just wanted to talk." He replied "Come in or you'll catch a cold."

Nodding in response I entered his room, it was my first time entering a boy's room at night, to be honest I'm quite scared, if I just reported him to the school everything would end well for me and he would be expelled.

Was I easily swayed by the insurance he gave? Maybe, but still I'm curious what's his goal for doing things like this?

His room was clean.... or to be more precise it was empty, it was like the first time when I saw my own room, on the first day of school.

"You can sit on the bed. What do you want? coffee, tea, or cocoa?"

"I want ice cream." I saw his brow furrow slightly as he heard my reply.

**(Nishikawa's revenge XD)**

"I don't have ic-"

"Hmm then can I check your fridge?"

"*Sigh*. I only have cookies and cream." he admitted.

"I'll take it."

"Your mood swings are scary." he commented, and whose fault do you think it is, that I am in this foul mood?

After threatening me like that who wouldn't be angry at him? Taking his ice cream was just the start.

"So can you answer my question from before?" I asked as I ignored his comment, while eating the ice cream he served.

### **AYANOKOUJI POV**

"So can you answer my question from earlier?" she asked as she enjoys my ice cream-chan.

"Before that, you didn't bring your phone just like I instructed right?"

"It's what you demanded after all. And besides, you're making me have some sort of insurance for me to comply with you."

She easily understood the meaning behind my instructions, if it's someone else they would've just assume that I'm playing it safe by making sure that our conversation wouldn't be recorded.

"So who did you inform about what I had done?"

I also didn't demand her that she couldn't report me or tell someone else, this is also to somewhat reassure her and not report me to the school.

"And why should I answer that?"

"It's fine if you don't want to answer, and besides I'm just curious."

If she told Mashima-sensei it would mean that I would be expelled tomorrow, almost everyone can observed Mashima-sensei was a 'serious-upright' type of teacher. And besides any teacher will probably report me to the higher ups of the school if they knew that I had confidential files of students which is a serious matter, since it's a breach of private information. Is what she probably thought, but....

I can just make Horikita-senpai or Kiriyama-senpai take the fall, since I still have the message they used to send me those files.

"Is it someone you trust?"

"You can say that."

"You really trust that person you informed huh?"

"Of course, because it's natural to trust someone who trusted

you." she retorted.

"I guess you can say that, what about me, do you trust me?"

"I've just known you since yesterday so all I can say is, I don't trust you yet."

"Yet huh?" I muttered.

But she probably thinks that she can trust me in the near future which is what I am also aiming for.

"To answer your question from earlier, I want you to join the Student Council in our Second Year."

"EHH? No no no. But why me of all people?"

"Who knows?"

"You're forcing me to join, but you're not giving me a proper answer?"

"Maybe because it was you?"

"You're just becoming irritating you know?"

"I didn't lie that it's 'because it was you'. I already had plans to fill someone in but changed my mind since I transferred classes, and I also saw that you have a better potential than the one who I planned to asked join the SC."

By giving answers like these she may assume that the only file I got was just hers or maybe some other more students and I just used her for some other reasons, this will also pique her interest in joining. But over time or more specifically if she complied with me joining the SC she will know the truth.

"But why inform me now? You could just ask me if we're already in our Second Year, and will Nagumo-senpai would just willingly accept me if I applied?"

A logical question.

"Don't worry about that, in the next few days Nagumo-senpai will not be the president anymore."

"You seemed confident with that declaration of yours."

"Yeah, but you're not that surprised?"

"Who knows, maybe I'm already done being surprised on what you do or what you say, ever since the revelations yesterday." She stated. "So you're meaning to say that if I joined the SC I will be under the rule of a new president?"

"Yeah, something like that."

"If that's the case was the former SCP also involved in this? Judging from your interaction yesterday, you seemed pretty close and he probably respected you, so I just assumed yesterday that he was probably the one who supplied you with the missing points."

"Good deduction, do you see now why I chose you?"

"Is that an indirect praise coming from you?"

"Who knows? So will you agree on joining now?"



"Sigh. You know what, if you just tried to ask me sincerely earlier that you need my help and didn't have to resort into threa--" She paused as if she realized something. "That's not all you wanted right, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"How can you tell?"

"You said on your message earlier that this will be a long talk, and besides you already predicted that I will easily comply with your request right?"

"Yeah that's right.... I want you to tell me about your past."

She tensed up as she heard my request.

"It was already written in the file, right?" she replied as I could see her slightly tremble for a moment.

"I want to know everything."

This is also a necessary step since I can't let her betray me, if I knew more I can use it against her if she ever plans to.

"No!! I won't disclose anything, since I already planned on agreeing to help you in your first request."

"You do have a point but...." I reached out into the drawer of my table and showed her a flash drive. "Then how about this?"

"What's with that?"

"This contains a video of female students from the school changing in the locker room way back on our summer vacation." She instantly glared at me as I revealed the content of the flash drive. "Maybe I should also sell it just like what your mother did?"

It was insensitive of me to include her mother when I somehow knew what her mother had done to them, not to the extent that I knew the whole thing as the file only indicated some sort of outline regarding her past, but this will obviously trigger something within her.

Nishikawa stood up and threw the ice cream container at me, which I easily evaded and it hit the wall. The little contents on the container spilled on the floor but I didn't care as I face the furious Nishikawa in front of me.

"You!!! You're threatening me by doing what that devil did to us?" she loudly growled.

If my neighbors from the other rooms hear her they will get the wrong idea and might report us, as I was about to move closer to her and cover her mouth....

"Stay strong Ryouko!!!"

She shouted as I was about to approach her.

"Stay strong Ryouko!!!"

Her loud voice reverberated around my room.

My neighbors are probably confused right now, we'll just apologized later or if this take too long maybe tomorrow.

I could see tears forming around her eyes, was she reminded of her past? She then took a deep breath, sat back on my bed quietly, crossed her arms as she closed her eyes and began to think.... or more like she's meditating.

If it's someone else they would just probably lash out on me or just be terrified if they are threaten with their past.

So she has some sort of mantra to calm herself down huh.

It acts like a Defense mechanism within her when she's reminded of her past, easing the pain in her mind.

Interesting, is this why she was placed in Class-A even though she had a past like that? Did the school deemed her as somewhat independent and who can control her feelings unlike Honami who was easily broken when her past was exposed?

"Sorry that was insensitive of me." I apologized as I also sat back on the chair in front of her.

"You asked me earlier if I can trust you right?" She asked as she opened her eyes.

"Yes."

"Is this also part of your plan to make me trust you?"

She's not entirely wrong but...

"Who knows."

"Vague answer again huh?" she sighed "How about this, if I tell you about my past you should also tell me yours, deal?"

So for me to trust her I must also do the same thing I wanted from her.

"You're not in the position to make a deal like that aren't you?"

"I am, all I have to do is feign ignorance that you have that and you can sell it just like your threat from earlier or do whatever you want with and I won't care."

She's challenging me huh?

"Aren't you worried that they woul--"

"I'm not!" She cut me off, but it was still noticeable, she was lying to herself that she will just ignore my threat.

### ***NISHIKAWA POV***

"I am, all I have to do is feign ignorance that you have that and you can sell it just like your threat from earlier or do whatever you want with and I won't care."

I lied to myself, I don't want others to experience the things I had. It felt really disgusting.

But he's just trying to rile me up, that's why I need to stay strong. Stay strong Ryouko!!!

"Aren't you worried that they woul--"

"I'm not!" I instantly cut him off.

If he's someone who doesn't want to reveal about his past why would he force me? He seems like a guy who doesn't want anyone to pry regarding his past but why is he doing all of this?

Was it to gain my trust? If so....

Do I want to trust him even though he doesn't seem to trust me?

But for some reason I want to. Yet in order to fully trust him, I also need to make sure that I'm trusting the right person...

"So here's a condition, want to sign a contract?" I asked.

"What sort of contract?"

"But before that, can I ask you one more thing?"

"Go ahead."

"Regarding Karuizawa-san did you also threaten or blackmailed her like this?"

"Who knows?"

"This again, we won't get anywhere if you continue to be vague like that."

"Sigh, somewhere along the line you can say that I also blackmailed her into cooperating with me and just used her." he admitted.

So he also knew her past just like I thought.

Used her? Wait did he demand something perverted to her?

"Did y--" He cut me off.

"Sigh. Don't get the wrong idea since it's not what you think. By 'used' I mean to control the girls in my former class and some other various stuff, but I didn't do anything of what you're thinking of."

If Karuizawa-san of all people trusted this insensitive guy named Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun....

"I will tell you everything you want but you have to agree with the contract I have in mind."

"Then let's hear it."

"No, let me write it now to make things more easier."

"Sigh. Ok."

He stood up to get a blank sheet of paper and a pen, then handed them to me...

Thus I began writing.... and had the biggest gamble in my life, which was trusting him...

### ***Ayanokouji POV***

She finished writing and she handed her written contract to me.

### **CONTRACT:**

*[ I Nishikawa Ryouko and this insensitive guy*

will both agree on the terms and conditions of this contract which are as follows:

(1). If he deemed that he can trust me he'll tell me everything regarding his past.

*Deadline: Until Graduation, if not fulfilled he'll drop out.*

(2). If I deemed that he betrayed me, he'll drop out.

(3). If he deemed that I betrayed him, I'll drop out.

(4). 2 and 3 can both happen simultaneously.

(5). If one of us by chance was expelled, the other one will drop out. ]

She came up with a contract that was bound by trust, a contract that will take down both of us if the one betrayed the other.

I feel that she won't lie to me regarding her past for the reason that she was able to come up with this contract by trying her best to prevent me from selling the content of the flash drive, which I didn't really planned on doing in the first place.

If I deemed that I didn't trusted her, all I have to do is sacrifice my graduation. I'll drop out at graduation day and I can still enjoy my last 2 years here.

I can also deemed that I trusted her, but tell her a different kind of past I had in my life, that's not related to that place. With this the both us will graduate safely.

But if I can trust her with our last 2 years here in school, maybe she can be useful even after we graduated and I can include her in the revolution of destroying that place together with Arisu. Which I think was the most plausible outcome for us.

There was also an option of not accepting her contract, just accept what I have already gained and the both of us will come into a truce, since she was also already willing to sacrifice herself with the contract she came up with. Yet for some reason...

"So? Do you want to agree with those conditions?"

"Yes." I agreed, not because I'm really interested in her past or some sort, but the fact she challenge me of all people was commendable.

"Now sign it."

"Sigh. But do you really have to specify that I'm an 'insensitive guy'?"

"Yeah. Because you are, aren't you?"

I just sighed again with her remark and signed her contract.

"You really sighed a lot, don't you?"

"It just became a habit of mine."

"Now take a picture and send it to me and Miki."

"You're really thorough aren't you? And the one you informed

regarding my threat message was Yamamura huh?"

"Of course, this is to make her some sort of witness and besides I don't want her to be worried about me."

"Then can I also send this to Arisu and Mashima-sensei?"

"Go ahead." She easily agreed.

The both of us knew that having a teacher as witness on this contract will ease the burden on both sides.

I sent the photo of the contract to persons who will be involved, then she began her story....

**YUUKO POV** ▲□

My name is Nishikawa Ryouko....

.....

.....

No, the name that was given to me was Nishikawa Yuuko.

I was born in a middle class family my father works as an Engineer at a big construction company while my mother was a secretary from the same company.

I have an older sister and a younger one, their names were Yuuka-onee-chan and Yuumi-chan respectively.

To be honest you can describe us a one happy and content family...

But everything started to change when my father died due to an accident at the site of their project...

My mother was depressed, as stress became more and more apparent to her, she resigned to her work...

A month after my father died, my mother started taking some sort of medicine which we were clueless of and began locking herself in her room...

.....

.....

Then hell began...

Another two months had passed, she became thinner due to the accumulated stress she had, I also suspected that the unknown medicine she takes was also a factor.

The food that was served to us was store brought meals and my mom doesn't cook anymore as she was always in her room almost the whole day. But I didn't mind since I knew that my mom was still unwell because of my father's death...

And for some reason she was always calling for Yuuka-onee-chan....

.....

.....

Since then, everytime that I was taking a bath I could feel that

someone was watching/observing me.

I don't know why but for some reason it made me feel anxious... and it really felt creepy.

Our mother confiscated our phones reasoning that they could hinder our studies.

.....

.....

Again I could see tears from Yuuka-onee-chan's eyes as she ran away from mom's room.

I tried to go into her room and asked her... but its just her usual reply...

*"I'm alright, don't worry about me."*

.....

.....

I finally discovered the small hidden cameras that were lurking in the bathroom, in my room, and almost everywhere in the whole house, they were well hidden in blind spots.

I confronted my mom on this since I found her behavior suspicious and she was the only one who was always alone in the house as the three of us goes to school.

As I got into her room, I saw my naked sister together with her who was wearing a mask... a masquerade mask, I asked them for an explanation on what's going on...

*"Since you'll also be a part of it, I guess I won't mind telling you, Yuuko...."* She calmly said, at first I had no idea on what she was talking about... No, I already had a vague one but I still didn't want to believe it.

Hearing that I would also be part of it, my sister fell on her knees muttering *"Why why why"* over and over.

My mother just casually explained her reasons not minding our reactions nor just how disgusting what she was saying...

She became addicted to gambling online which was supposed to be a stress reliever at start, it's also why she was always in her room. She spent almost all of our father's money and insurance money that was supposed to be for our education in some stupid gambling and lose it all.

To continue her gambling she sold photos and videos of our naked bodies, when we're taking a bath or while dressing up... That was the only beginning, after some time she asked my older sister to record herself while playing with herself as she will also sell those photos and videos with her clients.

Why did my sister easily complied with her? it's to protect us...

Shocked by her revelations, I fell on my knees trying to

comprehend everything she had said..... She just thought us like some sort of 'property'.

Using her own daughters like this, my heart was broken as she just calmly exposed herself, not a bit of regret was seen on her face. But I still tried trying to reach into her....

I proposed to her that she should stop and both me and onee-chan will do some part time jobs... Of course I knew it's unreasonable since I'm just a first year middle school student...

But she reasoned that the money that we will make from part time jobs will not be enough for us, specifically not for us but for her gambling.

I really felt shaken as I heard her stupid reason...

Did the loss of our father make her this broken?

Doesn't she care for us anymore?

The loving and caring mother we knew was gone and it was like we were living with a devil now.

.....

.....

And finally the final trigger that will make us comply with her.....

The words she blurted were still clear on my mind even now.

*"I will sell, no I will just post these photos and videos of your little sister publicly and will expose the real identity of your older sister if you still want to disobey me or report me."*

She blackmailed us using our 6 year old sister and my older sister's identity's revelation.

Was she out of her mind? Doesn't she know of the consequences if she really did what she said?

As I imagine that my little sister was about to be virtually tainted by some random old men, I want to vomit.

The thought that first came to us as the older sisters were *'We will protect her no matter what.'* because we didn't want our youngest sister to be tainted.

I don't know anymore, why is this happening to us?

.....

.....

Twice a week we were being recorded stripping while wearing sailor outfits, bunny outfits, and anything her customers wanted. Playing with our genitals and being pleased by some sex toys, all of it were recorded pleasuring the men who bought the recordings.

The only thing that protected us were the masks she allowed us to wear to hide our identity, masks that are used for masquerade, as her customers deemed them erotic...

So no one really knew our whole face behind the mask... is what we initially thought...

Everytime a recording session was done I always felt disgusted with myself as I quietly sob in my room.

.....

.....

In a room....

Six weeks after her threat..... We cried.

Both me and my little sister cried out loud not because of humiliation but....

*"Ughhh so noisy!! Can't you stop crying already?!"* my mother irritately growled as she headed towards the room...

When she saw us.... No, when she saw my older sister who's face was leaning on my lap and as her gaze fell on the rope hanging in the room, she easily understood what happened, falling on her knees tears began to flow.

She realized her faults but it's too late since my older sister was already.... dead.

.....

.....

Shuuna-san was the one who looked after us when our mom was arrested, she was our aunt related to our father, his younger sister. She was the first relative to come and check on us after everything happened.

She was also the only adult that we became really close to, and helped me regarding the suicide case of our sister.

I became really suspicious on what led my sister to kill herself since we promised that the both of us will protect Yuumi-chan. So together with our aunt and some cops we tried to investigate it, that I sacrificed my school to do so and dropped out... My aunt was really against it at first but as she understood my feelings she agreed.

An autopsy was done, and the results deemed that she was sexually abused... going further we discovered on her phone that there was an unknown number who called and messaged her.

*[If you didn't come at the back of the gymnasium I will expose you and your sister.]* the message said.

As the investigation goes further, it was discovered in my mom's PC as they checked her transactions, two customers of hers were from from my sister's school... the principal and sister's home room teacher, both of them did the act of assaulting my sister.

As the trial of both primary suspects continued which lasted for a month, they gave up as the evidence piled up and told us what



really happened, from their testimony they somehow felt that the girl named Nishikawa Yuuka was familiar, their suspicions were proven due to her reaction when she saw the video of me and her.

I lashed out at the court, I was enraged with the supposed to be educators had really done that, if they didn't.... if they didn't..... Yuukaa-onee would still be alive.

But these things wouldn't happen to us if our so called 'mother' never did those horrible things to us in the first place.

At the funeral of my sister the cops said that my mother was begging them to tell us that she wanted to attend Onee-chan's funeral.

Which I easily refused since I still loathed her from the bottom of my heart.

.....

.....

My aunt together with her friend lawyer suggested that we should change our names since it would be more safe as the police were still tracing the other clients of our mother, that was the start when I go by the name Ryouko.

I also started wearing contacts and dyed my light blonde hair with a silver-gray color, just to be on the safe side.

From Yamagata we moved out to Saitama which where Aunt Shuuna-san was living and restarted our life there together with my sister Yuumi-chan, who now goes with the name Rumi-chan.

Since I dropped out from school, I was held down a year but it really didn't matter as I had a new beginning in my life which was one of the most important to me, since it made me take the first step to move on.

From time to time I had panic attacks and nightmares about what happened from the past, and the who always helped me with them was Shuuna-san who always calmed me down when I had them. I have trouble in sleeping when I had those panic attacks which sometimes leads to nightmares.

When some topics regarding sexual abuse or sexual thoughts were being discussed in public, sometimes it trigger me into having a panic attack, and for some reason just remembering her face and her voice saying those words calms me down when I shouted them.

## **AYANOKOUJI POV**

"I thought I manage to move on from that since the last time I had a panic attack was a year and half ago already, but the insensitive guy named Ayanokouji-kun managed to trigger me on having one again..."

She was telling me her story and I was just listening quietly. Tears were forming around her eyes, forcing herself not to cry as she recalled her past.

I don't know why but somehow the both of us we're a bit similar, being treated as property by our supposed to 'parent'....

She had her aunt to help her move on and I had Matsuo to help me escape that place.....

But as always I still don't feel a thing.

If I had someone dear to me when I was in that place just like Nishikawa had her sisters, will I be more expressive on what I want and who I wish to protect?

If somehow someone was beside during those times within that place, if somehow instead of just observing the other kids breaking do.....

I shrugged off the thoughts since I know deep within me I doubt it will happen, it seems like the ideals that man implanted on me were still stronger than the new things that I'm experiencing here in this school, but....

"Thank you Nishikawa, and sorry for forcing you."

"Now you're apologizing after forcing me to recall those things? What a jerk..."

I sat beside her, as I slowly and gently patted her head.

"Stay strong Ryouko." I calmly said, as she heard those words....

She cried.

She sobbed for a while not minding my existence as she mumbled the words "Yeah, Ryouko is strong." from time to time...

....

....

The moment that she calmed down after crying silence befell us, as we just sat together side by side.

"Are you alright now?" I asked, to break the silence that enveloped us.

"Yeah, insensitive suspect-kun."

"Now you came up with another weird nickname."

"You deserve it."

"Maybe."

"....."

"....."

".....I think no one will marry me anymore if they found out that I was some sort of exhibitionist from the past."

"....."

"See? I'm just a disgu--"

"If that's the case then I won't mind marrying you, you know."

"Is that so, you wouldn't mind---..... Ehh?!!"

"Don't be too loud." I said as I flicked her on the forehead.

"O-o-owww."

"Sigh. You'll disturb my neighbors again and they'll really get the wrong idea now since it's almost midnight."

### **3RD PERSON POV**

Ayanokouji stood up not minding Nishikawa who was still astounded by what he said.

He walked towards his cabinet to get a spare shirt and handed it to Nishikawa.

"You can use that and change, since the sleeves of your pajama's top is still drenched in tears after you cried earlier."

"....."

"I will be sleeping on the couch you can use the bed." He proposed.

It was already 11:45PM and if someone saw her exiting the boy's room while she had reddened eyes due to her crying she might get questioned and they might get reported.

Nishikawa who somehow came back to her senses and understood what Ayanokouji was trying to imply, stood up and tugged his shirt.

"What?"

"Y-yo-you said earlier that you wouldn't mind m-ma-marrying me, so it won't be a big deal if we slept together, right?"

She was looking down feeling embarrassed when she asked that question, while stammering on her own words.

"Sigh, so what's the real reason?"

"So even that won't escape you huh?" Nishikawa asked, she felt glad that he got what she meant....

"Was it regarding the nightmares you talked about earlier?"

".....Yeah."

....

....

After Nishikawa changed her drenched pajama, both of them lay down on Ayanokouji's bed.

"Goodnight Nishikawa."

"Yeah, Goodnight insensitive suspect-kun."

And then they slept.....

....

....

....

....

....

....

Or so they thought.

....

....

Nishikawa tried to sleep but she can't due to the nervousness she felt.

"Can't sleep?"

"Yeah."

"Maybe I should just really sleep on the couch."

"T-that's not it, maybe I will fall asleep if you talked to me for a while."

"Is that so? What do you want to talk about, senpai?"

"Why are you suddenly calling me 'senpai'?"

"No, just felt like it since I learned that you're a year older than me."

"Hmmm, I think Ryouko is fine and I'll also call you by first name,..... or maybe a cute nickname..... what about Taka-mon?"

"I guess it's fine, Ryouko-senpai..."

"Yahh! drop the senpai. It feels weird being called one by your own classmate."

"Do you ever feel like being called Yuuko again?"

"No, it makes me remember them for some reason...."

'By them she meant both her mother and older sister huh? Someone she loathed and someone she really loved....' Ayanokouji thought.

"Then what about Youko? Can I call you with that nickname? It has a similar tone to your former name but with a different meaning."

"Hmmm.... I g-guess it's fine, Taka-mon."

"Is that so, then what else do you want to talk about Youko-tan?"

"Can you drop the 'tan'? It's somehow embarrassing...."

"You're adding a silly prefix on mine, so it's just fair to add into yours.

"....."

"What do you prefer 'tan' or 'senpai'?"

She placed her hand on her chest and could feel her heart beating faster.

Both feelings of embarrassment and happiness were currently existing within her.

"Fine fine, I'll settle with the 'tan'."

....

.....

### **AYANOKOUJI POV**

*Nishikawa Ryouko...*

*A braver and stronger existence than the girl named Ichinose Honami.*

*A headstrong girl like the girl named Karuizawa Kei.*

*A girl who's not as fragile as the boy named Hirata Yousuke.*

....

....

*And the most important thing of all, she will be a useful one to me.*

***To be Continued....***

**A/N**

So yeah, the longest and most complicated shit I've ever written. I hope it still make sense.

It was almost twice as long from my usual chapters. I somehow felt that I had a rollercoaster ride writing it, that's why I didn't cut it into a two parts.

What do you think? Psychological stuff at the start, drama at the middle, and fluff at the end. I don't know about the psychological stuff I've written tho, since I only have a smol brain BUT I HAVE A BIG.... XD

And yeah, I just inserted some cliché anime/manga scenes at the end.

I also don't know if I executed her character properly... because I'm just new at backstory writing...

I think I've rewritten their interaction 2-3 times before ending up to this, since I also considered a lot of things...

She was already placed in Class-A which meant that she has somehow overcame her past unlike Ichinose (whose past was kinda meh for me) who still suffered from it until she was saved by Kiyō. Or Kei and Hirata who are still trying their hardest to move on.

I didn't go to the 'Eyes filled with darkness' or 'Dark eyes' scenarios because after reading it again and again on other fics it got cringe for some reason, well it's just my opinion since I know that my story was cringe too. And besides I think it's not needed since all she need was a little more push to really move on. Shuuna-san GigaChad.

The only thing that really doesn't make sense to me was..... why was Totsuka placed in Class-A?

ANYWAYS NEXT CHAP WOULD START THE EVENT SELECTION OR COMMANDER EXAM.

ALSO THANKS FOR 40K, I REALLY APPRECIATE IT.  
ADIOS!!